NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08253729 5

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/britishplutarchc01lond

Frontispiece to British Plutarch.

W. Hamilton inv. *J. Caldwall sculp.*

THE

BRITISH PLUTARCH,

CONTAINING

THE LIVES

OF THE

Moſt Eminent STATESMEN, PATRIOTS, DIVINES, WARRIORS, PHILOSOPHERS, POETS, and ARTISTS, of GREAT-BRITAIN and IRELAND, from the Acceſſion of HENRY VIII. to the preſent Time. Including, a Compendious View of the Hiſtory of England during that Period.

IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

TOR LIBRARY
NEW-YORK.

THE THIRD EDITION,

Reviſed, corrected, and conſiderably enlarged, by the Addition of New Lives.

LONDON:
Printed for CHARLES DILLY, in the Poultry.
MDCCXCI.

PREFACE.

THE utility of biographical compilations, the important knowledge to be derived from them, and the agreeable entertainment of which they are productive, are so generally acknowledged in the literary world, that it is unnecessary to make many observations upon that subject. Works of this kind afford great pleasure to the inquisitive mind, and have a natural tendency both to improve the understanding, and to amend the heart. It has been remarked, that 'Virtue, when abstractedly con-'sidered, makes but a faint impression on the 'human

'human mind; but when it is, as it were, ſub-
'ſtantiated by being exhibited in real characters,
'then every generous breaſt takes fire, our ſenſe
'of ingenuity is touched, and we are not only
'prompted, but encouraged to excel. We
'are inſpired with reſolution, and rouſed from
'that lethargy and inactive ſtate into which the
'generality of mankind are ſunk.' It has alſo been juſtly obſerved, that by having 'before 'our eyes the principles of men of honour and 'probity, enforced by example, we may be 'animated to fix upon ſome great model to be 'the rule of our conduct; and, at the ſame 'time, we ſhall pay the only tribute in our 'power to the memory of their public and pri-'vate virtues.'

As the general advantages of biographical works are apparent, ſo it is alſo manifeſt, that every intelligent Engliſhman muſt be deſirous of being acquainted with the lives, actions, and characters, of the moſt diſtinguiſhed perſons whom

whom his own country has produced. The preſent work contains the lives of the moſt eminent perſons who have appeared in this country, from the acceſſion of king Henry VIII., to the preſent time. In the diſpoſition of the work, the chronological order has been chiefly attended to; and as the lives of particular perſons often derive conſiderable light from an attention to the hiſtory of the times in which they lived, a brief view is occaſionally given of the hiſtory of England, during the period comprehended in our work. This has induced us, that hiſtorical events might be the better connected, in ſuch of the volumes wherein it was found expedient, to ſeparate men in public ſtations from thoſe of a more private character, and to give accounts of the latter in ſupplements to thoſe volumes.

In the brief view of hiſtorical tranſactions comprehended in this work, in the FIRST volume is compriſed an account of the Reformation

mation which commenced in the reign of Henry VIII. of the eſtabliſhment of the church of England under Edward VI. and of the relapſe of the kingdom to Popery, during the ſhort reign of Mary I.

The SECOND volume takes in the whole of that ſplendid period when Elizabeth ſat upon the throne, an age remarkably productive of great men, and in which the wealth, commerce, and proſperity of England were greatly advanced. The THIRD opens with the Union of the crowns of England and Scotland, in the perſon of James I. and ends with the death of Charles I. The FOURTH extends from the interregnum to the abdication of James II. The FIFTH commences with the Revolution; and, together with the SIXTH, SEVENTH, and EIGHTH volumes, contains a brief view of the public tranſactions, and lives of the moſt eminent perſons, from that great event to the preſent period.

In

In this Third Edition of our Work, the whole has been reviſed, and many errors which occurred in the preceding edition have been corrected. The work has alſo been extended from ſix volumes to eight; and twenty-ſeven new lives have been added. The new lives are thoſe of Biſhop ATTERBURY, Sir RICHARD STEELE, DANIEL DE FOE, Biſhop HOADLY, Dr. YOUNG, SAMUEL RICHARDSON, Dr. LARDNER, WILLIAM HOGARTH, Dr. JORTIN, THOMAS GRAY, DAVID HUME, WILLIAM SHENSTONE, Biſhop NEWTON, Dr. AKENSIDE, WILLIAM PITT, Earl of Chatham, Dr. JOHNSON, LAURENCE STERNE, DAVID GARRICK, Dr. SMOLLETT, CHARLES CHURCHILL, Lord CLIVE, SAMUEL FOOTE, Captain COOK, OLIVER GOLDSMITH, Sir WILLIAM BLACKSTONE, JONAS HANWAY, and Biſhop LOWTH. This edition has alſo been improved by the addition of a copious Index.

CON-

THE

BRITISH PLUTARCH.

THE LIFE OF

JOHN COLET, D. D.

DEAN OF ST. PAUL'S.

[A. D. 1466, to 1519.]

IN the various degrees of kindred merit, which endear the memories of illuſtrious men to lateſt poſterity, ſurely that which lays a foundation for the improvement of the human mind, through a long ſucceſſion of ages, by providing for the education of youth, deſervedly holds a very high rank. The reader therefore will not be diſpleaſed, that the chronological order of time, which we have engaged to follow accurately throughout this work, requires us to give the firſt place, in our extenſive field of emulative fame, to the memoirs of the pious founder of St. Paul's ſchool.

This excellent divine was the eldeſt ſon and heir of Sir Henry Colet, citizen and mercer, who, on the acceſſion of Henry VII. to the throne, had the honour of knighthood conferred on him, for his attachment to that Prince, after the death of Richard III. He was likewiſe twice elected, by his fellow citizens, to the dignity of chief magiſtrate.

JOHN COLET was born at London, in the year 1466; and in 1483 he was ſent to Magdalen College, Oxford, where after purſuing the uſual ſtudies, at the expiration of ſeven years, he took his degree of maſter of arts, with diſtinguiſhed reputation: for at this time all the works of Cicero were as familiar to him as his epiſtles; neither was he a ſtranger to Plato and Plotinus, whom he diligently peruſed and compared, the one as a comment on the other. But ſuch was the infelicity of thoſe times, that the Greek language was not only neglected in our ſchools and univerſities, but the love, and encouragement of it, was looked upon as hereſy; in reference to which barbarous opinion, Eraſmus quotes a proverb, "Cave a Græcis, ne fias hereticus, Beware of Greek, leſt you become a heretic." So that Colet was obliged to read the above-mentioned authors in their Latin tranſlations, till in his more advanced years he became acquainted with the great originals.

When Colet took his degrees in arts at Oxford, he had a competent eſtate to ſupport him as a gentleman, and ſufficient intereſt to recommend him at court. He had the advantage of a tall and graceful perſon: and the deſign of his being a courtier might perhaps have been conceived by his father, who had been uſed to gaiety and ſplendour in the public offices in the City, and had gained a very particular intereſt with the king. But the pious youth, determined by his now religious diſpoſition,

was resolved to enter into holy orders, and renounce the temptations of a courtly life. As a farther encouragement to our young divine, in 1485 he was presented to the valuable rectory of Dennington in Suffolk, by Sir William Knevet, a near relation of his mother, which living he held to the day of his death; and in 1490 he was also presented by his own father to the living of Thrynning, in the county of Huntingdon, which he resigned in 1493, when he was admitted prebendary of Botevant in the church of York, upon the resignation of the famous Christopher Urswicke. He was also made prebendary of Goodeaster in the church of St. Martin Le Grand, which he resigned the 26th of January 1503, having been admitted the year before to the prebend of Durnesford in the church of Sarum.

These preferments, bestowed on so young a man, may seem a little extraordinary. But we must consider that it was conformable to the practice of the Romish church; for Mr. Colet being then an Acolyte, which is one of their seven ecclesiastical orders, he was duly qualified to hold them.

Mr. Colet's ample income now afforded him the means of gratifying an inclination, which he had long indulged, of visiting foreign countries, in order to complete his studies in the learned languages, to read the antient Greek fathers, and to cultivate an acquaintance and friendship with men of letters. With this intent, he quitted Oxford in the year 1493, and passing over to the continent, studied divinity both in Italy and France, where he met with several other English students, who went abroad to attain the Greek tongue; for the passion for that language, and the purer writers in the Latin, was now grown very prevalent all over Europe, and no where more than in England, from whence numbers of the youth, and many advanced

in life, continually went out in queſt of them: becauſe, though ſeveral volumes of the works of the beſt authors lay dormant in our colleges and monaſteries, the monks, who knew that ignorance was their chief ſupport, could by no means be prevailed on to communicate them.

Charles VIII. ſtyled *the affable and the courteous*, at this time ſat upon the throne of France, and patronizing the ſciences Paris became the ſeat of learning, and a place of general reſort for men of eminence in every profeſſion. In this city, therefore, Mr. Colet took up his firſt reſidence; and ſoon became acquainted with Robert Gaguinus, the French hiſtorian, who had been in England on an embaſſy from Charles to Henry VII. This gentleman inſpired him with an ardent deſire to be recommended to Eraſmus, a ſpecimen of whoſe great genius, and ſkill in the Latin tongue, he had ſhewn him, in a complimentary letter upon the publication of his Hiſtory of France. Here likewiſe he formed an intimacy with the celebrated Budæus, who making honourable mention of our young divine in the courſe of his correſpondence with Eraſmus, laid the foundation of the future friendſhip which ſubſiſted between them.

From Paris, Mr. Colet went to Italy, where his acquaintance with men eminent for their learning became ſtill more univerſal, eſpecially at Rome. In this city, the famous grammarian William Lilly firſt fell under his obſervation, who had learnt the Greek at Rhodes, and was improving himſelf in Latin under John Sulpitius and Pomponius Sabinus.

In Italy he alſo met with two more of his countrymen, Grocyn and Linacre, who were perfecting themſelves in the knowledge of the Greek tongue, under Demetrius, Politianus, and Hermolaus Barbarus. At Padua, he likewiſe cultivated

vated an acquaintance with the learned William Latimer, who resided for some time in that university, with a view of increasing his knowledge in Greek literature.

Colet remained about four years abroad, returning home in 1497: but upon this occasion, it is said, he had much difficulty to resist his desire of appearing at court, where he could shew the accomplishments he had acquired in the world to the best advantage. Indeed, he was endowed with some natural propensities, which were better adapted to a public life, than to the confinement of a college. He had a high spirit, impatient of the least injury and affront. By the same bent of nature he was also addicted to love and luxury; and was inclined to an air of freedom and pleasantry. But he first conquered, and then commanded himself, by so far subjecting his passions to reason and philosophy, that he could bear a reproof, even from his own servants. He restrained his disposition to effeminate indulgencies, by a continual abstinence, a strict sobriety, close application, serious thinking, and religious conversation; and thus he preserved himself from the pollutions of the world. But whenever opportunities offered, either of jesting with facetious persons, or talking familiarly with the female sex, or of appearing at feasts and entertainments, nature was sure to break forth; for which reason, he very seldom associated with laymen, and generally forebore all public places. If, however, necessity brought him to such places, he singled out some learned person from the rest, with whom he discoursed in Latin, to avoid the profane discourse of the table; and, in the mean time, he would eat of but one dish, and take but one or two draughts of beer, for the most part refraining from wine. "There never was (says Erasmus) a more flowing wit; and, for that reason,

he delighted in the like ſociety; but even there he choſe ſuch diſcourſes as favoured moſt of religion; and it is a proof of his great good-nature, that he was a paſſionate lover of little children, whoſe innocence he admired of all things."

The firſt thing Colet did, after his return home, was to be ordained deacon, and, ſhortly after, prieſt. His father and mother then lived at London, with whom he reſided a few months, and then retired to Oxford. It being the cuſtom at that time for men of diſtinguiſhed abilities in the univerſity to ſet up voluntary lectures, Mr. Colet, though he had neither taken nor deſired any degree in divinity, read public lectures, without ſtipend or reward, by way of expoſition of the epiſtles of St. Paul. The novelty of theſe exerciſes occaſioned crowded audiences, and admiration of the lecturer increaſed and continued them. There was not a doctor in divinity or law, or any other dignitary of the church, who neglected to hear Colet, or withheld from him the applauſe that he deſerved. The bigots only, and thoſe whoſe intereſt it was to keep up the old ignorance and ſuperſtition, treated his diſcourſes as thoſe of a heretic and ſchiſmatic, becauſe he openly avowed the neceſſity of a reformation.

Things were in this poſture at Oxford, when Eraſmus, who had been for ſome time at Paris, as tutor to the lord Montjoy, was prevailed on by that nobleman to come over to England; and having a recommendation to Richard Charnock, of the college of St. Mary the Virgin, he went directly to that univerſity, where he was received and accommodated in the moſt friendly and hoſpitable manner; and at this time, and in this place, it was, that the intimate friendſhip between our Divine and Eraſmus commenced.

Charnock,

Charnock, to whom Erasmus had been recommended, was also an intimate acquaintance of Colet's; to whom he had no sooner mentioned the name of his guest, than we find him impatient to recommend himself to so excellent a person; for not waiting an opportunity to see Erasmus, he immediately wrote him, from his own chamber, an elegant and polite epistle, which shewed the writer to be a scholar, a traveller, and a gentleman; concluding with these words, "I congratulate your arrival in this island, and wish our country may be as pleasant to you, as I know, you, by your great learning, must be useful to us. I am, sir, and shall always be, devoted to one whom I believe to be the most learned and the best of men." Erasmus directly returned him an answer, equally polite and spirited, and said, "If he could find any thing commendable in himself, he should be proud of being commended by such a worthy person, to whose judgement he allowed so great weight, that his silent esteem alone had been preferable to all the applauses of a theatre at Rome. "Your country of England," adds he, "is most pleasant to me upon many accounts, particularly in this, that it abounds with those blessings, without which nothing would relish with me, men of admirable learning, among whom no one will repine that I reckon you the chief." He then praises the style of his letters, as easy, smooth, unaffected, flowing from a rich vein, as water from a clear fountain, every part like itself; open, plain, modest, having nothing in it rough, turbid, or intricate; so that he could see the image of his soul in what he wrote.

This epistolary correspondence, joined to the recommendations of Budæus, ended in the strictest intimacy imaginable, which continued to the end of their lives. They studied to improve each other,

and inſtruct mankind: and though they ſometimes differed in opinion upon theological points, this did not produce the leaſt ill temper or coolneſs between them. On the contrary, in 1499, Eraſmus and his admired friend firſt held their conferences upon our bleſſed Saviour's reluctances and fears before his laſt paſſion. Colet could not approve of the common opinion of divines, that Chriſt, upon a proſpect of his agonies, ſhrunk from them in his human nature. Eraſmus maintained the opinion of the ſchoolmen; but Colet had the advantage of the beſt meaning, and of the greateſt courage, in departing from the common ſentiments of the ſchools and the church in that credulous age. Eraſmus concludes his epiſtle concerning this diſpute, in the moſt friendly and reſpectful manner, calling himſelf a raſh man, and a raw ſoldier, for entering the liſts with ſuch an experienced general as Colet: appearing pleaſed at his confutation, Colet telling him, "When, like two flints, we are ſtriking one another, if any ſpark of light flies out, let us eagerly catch at it; we ſeek not for our own opinion, but for truth, which, in this mutual conflict, may be extorted as fire out of ſteel." Colet alſo freely expreſſed to Eraſmus his great diſlike of that new theology, which was unhappily brought into the church by the modern ſchoolmen, and was, in effect, nothing but the art of trifling and wrangling. He told him, he had ſet himſelf againſt thoſe ſcholaſtic divines, and would, if poſſible, reſtore the theological ſtudies that were founded upon the ſcriptures, and the primitive fathers. He ſaid it was upon this view, that he had publickly expounded the epiſtles of St. Paul, and ſhould be glad of a partner in that labour of ſearching the ſcriptures.

When Eraſmus left England, Colet ſtill continued at Oxford, where he went on with his uſual expoſition

expoſition of the apoſtolical epiſtles; though at this time the ſcriptures were little attended to by the generality of the clergy, ſcarcely any thing being regarded but ſcholaſtic divinity. In 1504, by the perſuaſion of his friends, he took the degree of doctor of divinity; but his thoughts were entirely bent on the deſtruction of that idol of ignorance, the cobweb divinity of the ſchools; aiming to exalt the ſcriptures and Jeſus Chriſt in its room. For this reaſon the ſchoolmen always looked upon Colet with a jealous eye. He frequently engaged them, always vanquiſhed them, and never convinced them. He continued, however, in conjunction with his friend Eraſmus, greatly to promote the Reformation, by attacking very ſucceſsfully the Scotiſts and the Thomiſts, who had divided the Chriſtian world between them; and alſo by diſcovering the ſhameful abuſes of monaſteries, and houſes called religious, and pointing out the evils which attended impoſing celibacy on the clergy.

Mr. Colet, while he was abroad, had been made a prebendary in the church of York, and had been inſtalled by proxy in 1494; but farther promotion was to be the reward of his conſpicuous merit; for Henry VII. who loved to confer unexpected favours, and eſteemed Colet as an eminent divine, and excellent preacher, diveſted of ambition, judged him on this account the more worthy of preferment; and, in 1505, made him dean of St. Paul's, without his ſolicitation, or knowledge. And indeed this excellent man, as if he had been called only to the labours, not to the dignity of his office, reſtored the decayed diſcipline of his cathedral church, and brought in what was a new practice there, preaching himſelf upon Sundays; and he called to his aſſiſtance other learned divines, particularly Grocyn and Sowle, whom he appointed to read divinity lectures upon all

ſolemn feſtivals. He would not take a deſultory text out of the goſpel or epiſtle for the day, but choſe a fixed and large ſubject, which he proſecuted in ſeveral ſucceſſive diſcourſes, till he went through the whole. He had always a full auditory, among whom were the chief magiſtrates of the city. Nor was he only a free and conſtant preacher of the goſpel in his own cathedral, but at court, and in many other churches, where his ſermons were much frequented, becauſe the ſtrict diſcipline of his life regularly correſponded with the integrity of his doctrine.

Till this time, there was ſcarcely ſo much as a Latin Teſtament in any cathedral church in England. Inſtead of the Goſpel of Chriſt, the goſpel of Nicodemus was affixed to a pillar in the nave of the metropolitan church of Canterbury. But the method that dean Colet took of expounding the ſcriptures began to raiſe in the nation an enquiry after thoſe oracles of God; and that he was more than half a Proteſtant, appears from his condemning auricular confeſſion, purgatory, and the daily celebration of the maſs. He would have all divine ſervice performed in a ſerious and ſolemn manner: he was delighted with the apoſtolical epiſtles; but more affected with the admirable words of our Saviour in the Goſpels, which he ſelected under proper heads, and intended to write a book upon them.

Eraſmus has tranſmitted the following relation of the dean's manner of living, as an example to poſterity: "The dean's table, (in the time of his predeceſſor) under the name of hoſpitality, had favoured too much of pomp and luxury, which he contracted to a more frugal and temperate way of entertainment. It had been his cuſtom, for many years, to eat only one meal a day, that of dinner; ſo that he always had the evening to himſelf.

ſelf. When he dined in private with his own family, he had uſually ſome ſtrangers for his gueſts; but few, becauſe his proviſion was frugal, though genteel. The ſittings were ſhort, and ſuch as pleaſed only the learned and good. After grace before meat, ſome boy, who had a good voice, read diſtinctly a chapter out of one of St. Paul's Epiſtles, or out of the Proverbs of Solomon. When the chapter was ended the dean would mention ſome particular part of it, from which he would frame a ſubject for converſation, and aſk his companions their ſenſe of its meaning: but he ſo adapted his manner to their diſpoſitions, that he cauſed even theſe grave ſubjects neither to tire their patience, nor to give any other diſtaſte. Towards the end of the repaſt, he generally ſtarted another ſubject of diſcourſe; and then diſmiſſed his gueſts, profited both in mind and body from thoſe viſits which they paid him. The converſation of his particular friends gave him infinite delight, which he would ſometimes protract till far in the evening; but their diſcourſe was either on religion or learning. He was curious in the choice of his company; therefore, if he could not have ſuch as were agreeable, he cauſed a ſervant to read to him out of the ſcriptures. In his excurſions, ſays Eraſmus, he would ſometimes make me one of his company, and then no man was more eaſy and pleaſant. He always carried a book with him, and ſeaſoned his converſation with religion. He had an averſion to all indecent or improper diſcourſe; loved to be neat and clean in his apparel, furniture, entertainment, books, and whatever belonged to him; yet he deſpiſed all ſtate and magnificence. Though it was then a cuſtom for the higher clergy to appear in purple, his habit was only black. His upper garment was of plain woollen cloth, which in cold weather was lined with fur. Whatever he received by church pre-

ferments was delivered to his ſteward, to be laid out in family occaſions, or hoſpitality: and all that aroſe from his large paternal eſtate was appropriated to pious and charitable uſes."

Notwithſtanding the dean's holy life, he could not eſcape the cenſure of an heretic; for having a great tenderneſs and compaſſion for the honeſt people who ſuffered as Lollards, he had the courage to interpoſe for one of them with the king, who granted him his life and liberty. This act of humanity expoſed him to perſecution from the biſhop of London (a rigid Scotiſt, and a virulent perſecutor of the new ſect), who accuſed the dean of hereſy, and preſented articles againſt him to the archbiſhop of Canterbury. But Warham well knew the worth and integrity of Colet: and therefore defended and patronized him; nor would he give him the trouble of putting in any formal anſwer. It is alſo ſaid, that the biſhop would have made the dean a heretic for tranſlating the Pater Noſter into Engliſh, if the archbiſhop had not ſtood up in his defence.

But the troubles and perſecutions which Colet underwent only ſerved to increaſe his charity and devotion. He had a plentiful eſtate, without any near relations; and he was reſolved to conſecrate the whole property of it to ſome permanent benefaction in his life time, as William of Wykeham had done at Wincheſter in the reign of Edward III. The dean thought that it would promote the reſtoration and improvement of letters, to provide a grammar-ſchool, for the inſtruction of youth in the Latin and Greek languages. He apprehended that this would be laying the beſt foundation for academical ſtudies, particularly thoſe of divinity; and conceived, that, in being the founder of one ſuch grammar-ſchool, he ſhould be the reſtorer of the two univerſities; and London being

the place of his nativity, he deemed it moſt worthy of his intended beneficence: but the beſt account of this inſtitution is given by Eraſmus, who ſays, "He laid out a great part of his inheritance in building St. Paul's ſchool, which is a magnificent fabrick, dedicated to the child Jeſus. Two dwelling-houſes were added for the two maſters, to whom ample ſalaries are allotted. The ſchool is divided into four apartments: the boys have their diſtinct forms one above another; and every form holds ſixteen. The wiſe founder ſaw, that the greateſt hopes and happineſs of commonwealths were in the training up of children to good letters and true religion; for which noble purpoſe he laid out an immenſe ſum, and would admit no perſon to bear a ſhare in the expence."

The founder has not clogged this noble ſeminary with any ſtatute that might prevent it from being generally uſeful to the world. Children born in any part of the kingdom, even foreigners of all nations and countries, are capacitated to take part of its privileges. The wiſdom of the founder is alſo very apparent, in giving liberty to declare the ſenſe of his ſtatutes in general, and to alter or correct, add or diminiſh, as ſhould be thought proper or convenient, in future times, for the better government of the ſchool.

Theſe ſtatutes were drawn up by the dean himſelf, in Engliſh; but with ſuch a grave and pious ſtrain, that they ſeem to have been written by one who was not of the communion of the Romiſh church. In the prologue he ſays, that "deſiring nothyng more thanne education and bringing uppe children in good manners, and literature, in the yere of our Lorde a M. fyve hundred and twelfe, he bylded a ſcole the eſtende of Paulis churche, of CLIII. to be taught fre in the ſame. And ordained there a maiſter, and a ſurmaiſter, and a chapelyn, with

with ſufficient and perpetual ſtipendes ever to endure; and ſet patrones and defenders, governours and rulers of that ſame ſcole, the moſt honeſt and faithful fellowſhipe of the mercers of London."

As dean Colet had been the pious founder of this ſchool, ſo he alſo laboured to be the perpetual teacher and inſtructor of the ſcholars, by drawing up ſome rudiments of grammar, with an abridgment of the principles of religion, and publiſhed them for the ſtanding uſe of Paul's ſchool. It was called Paul's Accidence, and dedicated to William Lilly, the firſt maſter, in a ſhort elegant Latin epiſtle, dated the firſt of Auguſt, 1513. In this introduction to grammar, the dean preſcribed ſome excellent rules for the admiſſion and continuance of boys in his ſchool, which were to be read over to the parents, when they firſt brought their children, for their aſſent to them, as the expreſs terms and conditions of expecting any benefit of education there. The dean alſo prevailed on Eraſmus to tranſlate from the Engliſh the inſtitution of a Chriſtian man into Latin verſe, briefly and plainly, for the eaſy apprehenſion and memory of the boys; which was to be the ſchool-catechiſm; with many other good eſſays, both in poetry and proſe, towards directing and ſecuring the principles and morals of his ſcholars: and Eraſmus upon this occaſion dedicated to him his two books "De copia verborum ac rerum," to form the ſtyle, and help the invention of young ſcholars, commending his piety and judgement in thus conſulting and promoting the good of his country.

The troubles in which the dean had involved himſelf by his zeal for the holy ſcriptures, and his attempts to produce a reformation in the lives of the clergy, in the reign of Henry VII. did not diminiſh his fortitude and public ſpirit in that of his ſucceſſor: for we have a remarkable inſtance on record

record of his manly freedom and intrepidity, and of the high degree of eſteem in which he ſtood with Henry VIII. any oppoſition to whoſe inclinations was generally fatal. When that monarch was preparing for war againſt France, doctor Colet was appointed to preach before him at court; which he did, and in general terms inveighed ſo ſtrongly againſt the impiety of going to war, that it was thought the preacher would have been ſent to priſon, or perhaps more ſeverely puniſhed. But the king ſent for Colet, and was at ſo much pains to convince him of the neceſſity of the war he was entering upon, that the dean, in a ſecond ſermon upon the ſame ſubject, preached up the lawfulneſs, the piety, and expediency of war for the ſervice of our country. This ſermon pleaſed the king ſo much, that he gave the dean thanks, and, ever after, his countenance; ſaying to his nobles, who attended him, "Well, let every one chuſe his own doctor, but this ſhall be mine." His Majeſty then took a glaſs of wine, and drank very graciouſly to the preacher's health, whom he diſmiſſed with all the marks of affection, and promiſed him any favour he ſhould aſk for himſelf or friends.

Beſides his dignities and preferment already mentioned, doctor Colet was alſo rector of the fraternity or gild of Jeſus in St. Paul's church (for which he procured new ſtatutes); one of the chaplains and preachers in ordinary to king Henry VIII.; and, if Eraſmus is not miſtaken, of his privy council. When he was about fifty years of age, he grew ſo weary of the world, that he formed a deſign to ſequeſter himſelf in ſome monaſtery, and there paſs the remainder of his days in peace and ſolitude; but, as he had many objections to the manner in which thoſe eſtabliſhments were conducted, he built a convenient houſe, within the precinct of the charter-houſe,

near

near the palace of Sheene in Surrey, where he intended to retire in his old age, when unable to discharge the duties of his function. But death prevented him; for having been seized by that dreadful and epidemical disease called the sweating sickness, at two several times, he relapsed into it a third, which threw him into a consumption, and carried him off, on the 16th of September, 1519, in the fifty-third year of his age. One of his physicians judged his disease to be the dropsy: but no extraordinary symptoms appeared upon opening his body, only that the capillary vessels of the liver had some pustulary eruptions. His corpse was carried from Sheene to London, and, by the care of his aged mother, it was buried in the cathedral church of St. Paul's, with an humble monument, and only this inscription, designed by himself, Jo. Coletvs. However, the company of mercers, being willing to shew how much they valued him, erected another to his memory with his effigies; but that being destroyed by the great fire, all that now remains is, the description which Sir William Dugdale gives us of it, in his History of St. Paul's cathedral.

He wrote several things, but only the following were published before and after his death. 1. *Oratio habita a doctore Joanne Colet, decano sancti Pauli, ad clerum in convocatione, anno* 1511. This was printed in 4to. by Richard Pynson, and Dr. Knight has reprinted it, in the appendix to his life of Colet, together with an old English translation of it, supposed to have been made by the dean himself. It contains a very manly, sensible, and spirited attack upon the corruptions of the church and clergy of that age. 2. *Rudimenta Grammatices, &c.* called Paul's Accidence: this little manual, with some alterations, and great additions, now forms the syntax in Lilly's common

mon grammar. 3. *Monition to a godly life.* 4. *Daily devotions, or the christian's morning and evening sacrifice.* Some manuscript commentaries on St. Paul, and on the apostolical epistles, were found in an obscure corner of his study, but written in an illegible character, so that they were totally useless. In all probability, they were only notes, from which he read his public lectures at Oxford.

The person of dean Colet, as described by Erasmus, was tall and comely, and he was blessed with an easy, polite address, which gave a grace to every thing he said or did. His learning was uncommon for the age he lived in, his piety exemplary, and his public spirit as a preacher unprecedented; but his salutary reproof of vice in high stations was conveyed in such strong arguments, untinctured with pride or moroseness, that it procured him advancement even under the reign of a most arbitrary prince, who put many of his subjects to death without mercy, for presuming to arraign his conduct. In a word, dean Colet was one of the brightest ornaments of this country, and of the age in which he lived; and must be remembered with gratitude, as one of the chief instruments in the hands of Providence, for bringing about the reformation of these kingdoms from Popery; his bold discourses from the pulpit on the abuses which had crept into the church, and the scandalous lives of the clergy, having opened the eyes of the nation; and this happy impulse to found a seminary of learning for youth, having given birth to that astonishing increase of those charitable foundations, which took place, within thirty years before that important and memorable event.

Among the eminent persons who have been educated at St. Paul's school, were the following: John Leland, William Camden, John Milton,

Dr.

Dr. Richard Cumberland, bishop of Peterborough, and Dr. Arthur Ashley Sykes. John Churchill, afterwards the great duke of Marlborough, was also a scholar at St. Paul's school: but he probably did not remain there a sufficient time to make any considerable proficiency in classical literature.

*** Authorities. *Life of Erasmus*, *Biographia Britan.* article, COLET; and Dr. Knight's life of Colet.

The LIFE of

CARDINAL WOLSEY.

[A. D. 1471. to 1530.]

THOMAS WOLSEY, afterwards the famous cardinal, affords us, in his life, one of the most extraordinary examples to be met with in history of the vicissitudes of human events; who, being but the son of a butcher in the town of Ipswich in Suffolk, was, from that mean beginning, raised to the highest stations both in church and state: but, like an idol, set up by Fortune, merely to shew her power, was again, in an instant, tumbled from all his greatness; and reduced even to a more wretched condition than that from which he was

was originally taken. 'Tis true, indeed, he enjoyed the advantage of a liberal education; for we find, that his father obſerving in him an uncommon aptneſs to learn, ſent him early to the grammar ſchool; from whence, by means of his parents, who were people of ſome property, and other good friends, he was removed to and maintained at Magdalen College, Oxford. Here he made ſo extraordinary a progreſs, that he took the degree of batchelor of arts when he was only fifteen years of age; in conſequence of which he was called, The boy batchelor. He was then admitted to a fellowſhip in the ſame college, and in the end nominated maſter of Magdalen ſchool, where the ſons of the then marquis of Dorſet were placed for their education.

This was a fortunate circumſtance to the new preceptor; for the marquis, ſending for his ſons, on the ſucceeding Chriſtmas, to paſs the holidays at his country-ſeat, invited the maſter to accompany them; and he was highly pleaſed with Wolſey's converſation, who, to his univerſal knowledge, added a moſt inſinuating addreſs. The marquis alſo found the young gentlemen ſo much improved for the ſhort time they had been under his care, that he determined to reward ſuch merit and diligence with ſome diſtinguiſhed mark of approbation: and accordingly a benefice in his lordſhip's gift falling vacant during the receſs, he beſtowed it on Wolſey, which was his firſt eccleſiaſtical preferment. This was the rectory of Lymington in Somerſetſhire, to which he was inſtituted in 1500, being then in the 29th year of his age, and burſar of Magdalen College.

Wolſey quitted the univerſity, to take poſſeſſion of his living; but an accident happened very ſoon after, which made his new ſituation very diſagreeable to him. He was of a free and ſociable

ble diſpoſition, while he was ſeeking his advancement in the world; and therefore lived upon the moſt free and friendly terms with his pariſhioners, and the neighbouring gentlemen. By ſome of theſe he was drawn to a fair at an adjacent town, where it is ſaid, that being intoxicated with liquor, he occaſioned a diſturbance: upon which Sir Amias Pawlet, a juſtice of the peace, who had already taken a diſlike to him, ſet him in the ſtocks.

This indignity, ſo diſhonourable to a clergyman, Wolſey had it not in his power to reſent at the time; but he neither forgot nor forgave it; for when he came to be lord high chancellor of England, he ſent for Sir Amias to London, and ſharply reprimanded him for his former indecent and diſreſpectful behaviour towards a clergyman, and a perſon to whom, as a paſtor, he owed obedience. He alſo ordered him, on no account, to preſume to quit the capital, without a licence firſt obtained: in conſequence of which prohibition, that gentleman continued in the Middle Temple no leſs than ſix years; though he endeavoured by many little acts of adulation and ſubmiſſion, to ſoften the chancellor's anger.

But to return to the thread of our narrative. This mortifying accident gave Wolſey a diſtaſte to Lymington; and the death of his patron, the marquis of Dorſet, which happened ſhortly after, finally determined him to leave it. The next ſituation we find him in, is, that of chaplain to Dr. Dean, archbiſhop of Canterbury; a ſtation to which, the author of the Britiſh Antiquities is inclinable to think, Wolſey recommended himſelf by his own aſſiduity, rather than by the intereſt of others. Here he grew greatly in favour with the archbiſhop, and by his means the name of Wolſey was for the firſt time mentioned at the court

court of Rome; the Pope, at the archbiſhop's requeſt, granting his chaplain a diſpenſation to hold two benefices. However, this was the greateſt advantage Wolſey reaped from his connection with Dr. Dean, who died in 1503; ſo that he was again obliged to look out for another patron.

A man of true genius, and proportionable induſtry, is ſeldom diſappointed in any views on which he employs the whole ſtrength of his underſtanding. Wolſey found in himſelf a particular inclination to a court life; and, from ſeveral of his expreſſions, it ſhould ſeem as if he had been poſſeſſed with a notion of the grandeur, which awaited him in that ſphere; for he uſed to ſay, "If he could but ſet one foot in the court, he "would ſoon introduce his whole body." With this view he ſtudiouſly attached himſelf to perſons in power; and having, during his reſidence in the weſt of England, contracted an acquaintance with Sir John Nephant, who, at the time of archbiſhop Dean's death, was treaſurer of Calais, and a great favourite of Henry VII. he thought he could not do better than offer his ſervice to him; and Sir John being about this time on his departure for Calais appointed him to be his chaplain, and took him over to France, as one of his family. In this ſituation, Wolſey ſo effectually inſinuated himſelf into the good graces of his new maſter, that Sir John committed to his care the entire charge and management of his office; in the adminiſtration of which he gave ſuch ſatisfaction, not only to the treaſurer, but to all perſons who had any buſineſs to tranſact with him, that when Sir John obtained leave to reſign, on account of his great age, and returned to England, he recommended Wolſey in ſuch ſtrong terms to the king, that he put him upon the liſt of Royal Chaplains.

Thus

Thus Wolsey at last cast anchor in his desired port; and he did not scruple to say, that there were no advantages, however great, which he did not expect in consequence of that event. But as he knew that a bare settlement at court was not sufficient to secure a man's future fortune, without a peculiar interest among the courtiers, he enquired out those who were most acceptable to the king; and paid his devoirs with such success to Fox, bishop of Winchester, and Sir Thomas Lovel, the then reigning favourites, that they soon recommended him to the king, to perform a secret service, which gave him a fair opportunity to display his great political abilities, which was the basis of his future promotions.

In the year 1508, the king having resolved to enter into a secret negotiation with the emperor Maximilian, who then resided at Bruges in Flanders, in order to settle some points previous to his intended marriage with Margaret, duchess dowager of Savoy, the emperor's only daughter; it put him upon enquiring for a proper person to entrust with this private embassy, and Wolsey was no sooner mentioned by Fox and Lovel, as one excellently qualified to perform the service Henry required, than the king commanded him immediately to be sent for. After some private discourse, being fully satisfied of his capacity, Wolsey's dispatches were ordered; and on the Sunday following, at four o'clock in the afternoon, he set forward from Richmond, at which place Henry VII. then kept his court.

But how was Henry surprized, in less than three days after, to see Wolsey present himself before him! Supposing that he had protracted his departure, he at first began to reprove him for the dilatory execution of his orders; but Wolsey informed him (as was really the case, through many

many favourable circircumſtances which concurred in expediting his journey), that he was juſt returned from Bruges, and had ſucceſsfully ſettled the negotiation with which he was charged. "Aye!" ſaid the king; "but, on ſecond thoughts "I found ſomewhat had been omitted in your "inſtructions, and I ſent a meſſenger after "you, with fuller powers." To which Wolſey replied, "That he had indeed met the meſſenger "on the road in his return, and received the "powers his majeſty mentioned; but having, "during his ſtay at the imperial court, preconceived the purport of them, and the cloſe connection that buſineſs bore with his majeſty's "ſervice, he had preſumed, on his own authority, "to rectify what he conſidered as a miſtake in his "commiſſion, and humbly implored pardon for "daring to exceed it."

Henry was ſo well pleaſed with this expedient, and ſtill more ſo with the ſucceſs of the negotiation, that he thanked him; declared in council, he was a man fit to be intruſted with the management of affairs of importance; and rewarded him with the deanery of Lincoln, and the prebends of Walton Brinhold and Stow. Theſe preferments enabled him to reſign the living of Lymington; and, to complete his good fortune, his graceful and eloquent relation of the particulars of his late embaſſy, before the council, attracted the notice of the Prince of Wales, who grew very fond of his company.

In 1509, Henry VII. died, and was ſucceeded by his ſon Henry VIII. who at his acceſſion was only eighteen years of age. A more favourable event could not poſſibly have happened for Wolſey; his firm friend Fox biſhop of Wincheſter, having now a motive of intereſt as well as affection to induce him to forward his promotion. The influence

fluence which Fox had maintained in the cabinet, during the late reign, gave way to the aſcendancy acquired over the young King by the earl of Surrey: the crafty prelate introduced Wolſey to a great familiarity with his new maſter, in the double view of oppoſing his rival, and of ſupporting his intereſt in the cabinet by acting under him. In conſequence of this plan, in the firſt year of the reign of Henry VIII. Wolſey was appointed the king's almoner, and upon the conviction of Sir Richard Empſon, one of the corrupt Judges in the late reign, the king gave him that rapacious miniſter's houſe, near his own palace of Bridewell, in Fleet ſtreet, with ſeveral lands and tenements appertaing to the forfeited eſtate. The following year, 1510, he was admitted of the king's privy council, made reporter of the proceedings in the ſtar-chamber, canon of Windſor, and regiſter of the order of the garter. Thus firmly ſeated, he ſoon convinced his patron, that he had miſtaken his character; for he totally ſupplanted both Surrey and Fox, in the king's favour.

It may now be neceſſary to trace the means by which Wolſey gained the entire confidence of his royal maſter, and the ſole management of public affairs. "The young king, who had been kept under much reſtraint by his father, was now greatly diſpoſed, ſays Cavendiſh, to give a looſe to pleaſure, and to follow his princely appetite and deſire. His old and faithful counſellors would, however, occaſionally adviſe him to attend more to the public concerns of the nation, and to the duties of his regal character; but the almoner took upon him to diſcharge the king of the burthen of ſuch weighty and troubleſome buſineſs, putting him in comfort, that he ſhould need not to ſpare any time of his pleaſure, for any buſineſs that ſhould happen in the council, ſo long as he ſhould be

be there; who having his grace's authority, and by his commandment, doubted not to see all things well and sufficiently perfected, making his grace privy first of all such matters, before he would proceed to the accomplishment of the same, whose mind and pleasure he would follow to the uttermost: wherewith the king was wonderfully pleased."

In the year 1513, Wolsey gave such a striking proof of his extensive capacity in the management of state-affairs, even in the military department, that Henry from that time placed an unlimited confidence in his new minister. A war with France having been resolved upon in council, the king determined to invade that kingdom in person, and committed to Wolsey the care of furnishing and providing the formidable fleet and army employed upon that occasion; and Wolsey, though the task to him was new, and to any one must have been difficult, took it upon him without repining, to shew that he would not scruple his sovereign's commands in any thing.

Henry was earnestly solicited by Pope Julius II. to enter into this war against Lewis XII. of France, the Pope's avowed enemy, and it is shrewdly conjectured that Wolsey advised it, as a means of recommending himself to the court of Rome; and Henry the more readily consented, as he had in view the old claims of the kings of England to the crown of France. The diligence and dispatch therefore with which the preparations for this expedition were completed, so highly pleased the king, that he gave Wolsey the deanery of Hereford, and made him chancellor of the order of the garter.

Henry arrived at Calais on the 30th of June 1513, accompanied by the principal officers of his court, and his favourite Wolsey. The greatest part of his army had landed before him, and were

laying siege to Terouenne, a town situated on the frontiers of Picardy. The king soon joined them; and during the siege the emperor Maximilian arrived in the English camp, with a considerable reinforcement, entered into Henry's service, wearing the cross of St. George, and received one hundred crowns daily for his pay. Soon after, the English fell in with a convoy of provisions and ammunition for the use of the besieged; and these being attacked, a general engagement ensued, when the French were totally defeated by Henry and the emperor. The consternation of the French was so great, that they fled with the utmost precipitation; and the cavalry making more use of their spurs, than of their swords, this engagement was called, *The battle of the spurs*. Terouenne surrendered in consequence of this victory; Henry entered it in triumph, and delivered it up to Maximilian, who ordered the walls to be razed to the foundation, that the dominions of his grandson Charles of Austria might not be exposed to insults from the garrison of this fortress.

Henry then laid siege to Tournay, which capitulated in a few days; and the bishop refusing to take the oath of allegiance to the English sovereign, the bishopric was given by the king to Wolsey, who held it five years; and when the city was restored to France, he obtained an annual pension from the French king, in lieu of the bishopric.

Soon after the surrender of Tournay, Henry concluded a new treaty with the emperor, which was ratified at Lisle. He then embarked for England, where he arrived in October, after a most glorious campaign; and in the following year Wolsey was promoted first to the see of Lincoln, and then to the archbishopric of York, on the death of Cardinal Bainbridge.

Much

Much about this time, the duke of Norfolk, finding the exchequer almoſt exhauſted, was glad to reſign his office of treaſurer, and retire from court. Fox, biſhop of Wincheſter, partly overcome by years and infirmities, and partly diſguſted at the aſcendancy acquired by Wolſey, likewiſe withdrew himſelf entirely to the care of his dioceſe. The duke of Suffolk alſo had taken offence, that the king, by the favourite's perſuaſion, had refuſed to pay a debt which he had contracted during his abode in France; and he thenceforth affected to live in privacy. Theſe incidents left Wolſey without a rival, and his power over the king became abſolute; though, when Fox, before his retirement, warned Henry "not to ſuffer the "ſervant to be greater than his maſter," that prince replied, "That he knew well how to re-"tain all his ſubjects in obedience."

But it was a maſter-ſtroke of policy in our artful prelate, that, while he ſecretly directed all public councils, he ſtill pretended a blind ſubmiſſion to the royal will; by that means concealing from his ſovereign, whoſe imperious temper would otherwiſe have ill-brooked a director, the abſolute power he was gaining over him. And Henry, in nothing more violent than his attachments while they laſted, thought he could never ſufficiently reward a man ſo entirely devoted to his pleaſure and ſervice. In conſequence of this, Wolſey held at one time ſuch a multitude of preferments, as no churchman beſides himſelf was ever endowed with. He was even ſuffered to unite with the ſee of York the biſhoprics of Durham and Wincheſter, with the rich abbey of St. Alban's; and now the Pope obſerving the daily progreſs he made in the king's favour, and that in fact he governed the nation, being deſirous of engaging ſo powerful a miniſter in the intereſt

of the apoſtolic ſee, to complete his exaltation at once, created him a cardinal in 1515, under the title of Cardinal of St. Cecile, beyond the Tyber.

The grandeur which Wolſey aſſumed upon this new acquiſition of dignity is hardly to be paralleled. The ſplendor of his equipage, and coſtlineſs of his apparel, exceeds all deſcription. He cauſed his cardinal's hat to be borne aloft by a perſon of rank; and, when he came to the king's chapel, would permit it to be laid on no place but the altar. A prieſt, the talleſt and moſt comely he could find, carried before him a pillar of ſilver, on the top of which was placed a croſs; but not content with this parade, to which he thought himſelf entitled as cardinal, he provided another prieſt of equal ſtature and beauty, who marched along, bearing the croſs of York, even in the dioceſe of Canterbury; contrary to the ancient rule and agreement between thoſe rival metropolitans. The people indeed made merry with the cardinal's oſtentation upon this occaſion; and ſaid they were now ſenſible, that one croſs alone was not ſufficient for the expiation of his offences. But Warham, chancellor, and archbiſhop of Canterbury, having frequently remonſtrated againſt this affront to no purpoſe, choſe rather to retire from public employment, than wage an unequal conteſt with the haughty cardinal. He reſigned his office of chancellor therefore, and the ſeals were immediately intruſted to Wolſey; who, upon this new promotion, added to his former parade four footmen carrying gilt pole-axes, a gentleman to carry the great ſeal before him, and an additional train of attendants, who rode on horſe-back; but the chancellor himſelf was mounted upon a mule, capariſoned with crimſon velvet. In this ſtate he reſorted every Sunday

to

to the court at Greenwich, from York-houſe, now Whitehall.

The cardinal, while he was only almoner to the king, had rendered himſelf extremely unpopular by his ſentences in the ſtar-chamber, a moſt arbitrary and unconſtitutional court, where he preſided, and gave every thing as his maſter would have it, without any reſpect to the juſtice of the cauſe. But now that he was lord high chancellor of England, he made full amends, by diſcharging that great office with as penetrating a judgment, and as enlarged a knowledge of law and equity, as any of his predeceſſors or ſucceſſors.

But Wolſey, to increaſe his power over the clergy, as well as the laity, ſought for farther eccleſiaſtical promotion, and in this, as in every thing elſe, he ſoon ſucceeded. Cardinal Campeggio had been ſent as a legate into England, in order to procure a tythe from the clergy, for enabling the Pope to oppoſe the progreſs of the Turks, a danger which was real and formidable to all Chriſtendom, but had been ſo often made uſe of as a pretence to ſerve the intereſted purpoſes of the court of Rome, that it had loſt all influence on the minds of the people. The clergy therefore refuſed to comply with Leo's demand. Campeggio therefore was recalled in 1516; and the king deſired of the pope, that Wolſey, who had been joined in this commiſſion, might alone be inveſted with the legantine power, together with the right of viſiting all the clergy and monaſteries; and even with ſuſpending the whole laws of the church during a twelvemonth.

This additional honour was no ſooner obtained, than Wolſey made a ſtill greater diſplay of pomp and magnificence. On ſolemn feaſt-days he was not contented without ſaying maſs after the manner of the Pope himſelf: he had not only biſhops

and abbots to ſerve him, but even engaged the firſt nobility to give him water and a towel; and Warham the primate having wrote him a letter, where he ſubſcribed himſelf, "Your loving bro-"ther," Wolſey complained of his preſumption, in challenging ſuch an equality. Upon Warham's being told however of the offence he had given, he made light of it, ſaying, "Know ye not that this man is drunk with too much power?" But Wolſey carried the matter much farther than vain pomp and oſtentation. He erected an office, which he called the legantine court; in which, as lord Herbert ſays, he exerciſed a moſt odius and tyrannical juriſdiction; and he rendered it ſtill more obnoxious, by appointing one John Allen to be the judge, a man of ſcandalous life, whom he himſelf, as chancellor, had condemned for perjury. This wretch committed all ſorts of rapine and extortion: for, making an enquiry into the life of every body, no offence eſcaped cenſure and puniſhment, unleſs privately bought off; in which people found two advantages; one, that it coſt leſs; the other, that it exempted them from ſhame. Thus, as the rules of conſcience are in many caſes of greater extent than thoſe of law, he found means of ſearching into their moſt ſecret concerns; beſides, under this colour, he arrogated a power to call in queſtion the executors of wills, and the like. He ſummoned alſo all religious perſons (of what degree ſoever) before him; who, caſting themſelves at his feet, were grievouſly reproached, and terrified with expulſion, till they had compounded; beſides which, all ſpiritual livings which fell were conferred on his creatures.

No one dared carry to the king any complaint againſt theſe uſurpations of Wolſey, till Warham ventured to do it. Henry profeſſed his ignorance

of

of the whole matter: "A man (ſaid he) is not ſo "blind any where as in his own houſe. But do "you go to Wolſey, and tell him, if any thing "be amiſs, that he amend it." A reproof of this kind was not likely to be minded, and in effect only ſerved to augment Wolſey's enmity to Warham, whom he had never loved ſince the diſpute about erecting his croſſes. However, one London having proſecuted the legate's judge in a court of law, and convicted him of malverſation and iniquity, the clamour at laſt reached the king's ears, who rebuked the cardinal ſo ſharply, that from that time he became, if not better, more wary than before.

The cardinal was now building himſelf a very magnificent palace at Hampton Court, whither ſometimes he retired, as well to mark the progreſs of the work, as to procure a ſhort receſs from the fatigues of his buſineſs; which at that time was very great, conſidering that, over and above what immediately related to his archbiſhopric, his legantine character, and his place of chancellor, he had all the affairs of the nation on his hands; yet the public tranquillity was ſo well eſtabliſhed, and the general adminiſtration of juſtice, through his means, ſo exact, that eaſe and plenty bleſſed the land, in a manner unknown for many preceding reigns. This happy diſpoſition at home led Henry, in the year 1520, to give way to the ſolicitations of Francis the Firſt, king of France, and he conſented to an interview with that monarch, which was to be between Guienne and Ardres; the kings, by mutual conſent, committing the regulation of the ceremonial to the cardinal's diſcretion.

The occaſion of this interview was the death of Maximilian, which happened the preceding year; and the kings of France and Spain, being

competitors for the imperial throne, ſeparately paid their court to Wolſey, to engage his maſter in their intereſt; and the politic Wolſey encouraged both, receiving from them very rich preſents and penſions. Theſe rivals were Francis I. and the famous Charles V. who was elected emperor; and who, having other grounds for a rupture with Francis, came over to England privately, after his election, by the cardinal's connivance, to divert Henry from this famous interview. Charles met the king at Dover; but all he could obtain was a promiſe from Henry, that nothing ſhould be tranſacted between him and the king of France prejudicial to his intereſt. The cardinal was now careſſed and flattered by moſt of the powers of Europe: the ſenate of Venice in particular addreſſed him in a letter, in which they felicitated him on the fortunate conduct of an event that required the moſt conſummate prudence; the Pope too gave him very ſtrong teſtimonies of his approbation, granting him a yearly penſion of 2000 ducats, and conſtituting him perpetual adminiſtrator of the biſhopric of Bajadox.

By theſe extenſive ſubſidies from foreign courts, and the unlimited munificence of his own ſovereign, who was continually loading him with ſpiritual and temporal monopolies, Wolſey's income is reported to have fallen little ſhort of the revenues of the crown of England. This was a circumſtance ſufficient to raiſe the ambition of a man, naturally ſo aſpiring as the cardinal, to any height.

Upon the death of Pope Leo X. 1520, he thought of nothing leſs than being poſſeſſed of St. Peter's chair; and immediately diſpatched a ſecretary with proper inſtructions to Rome; at the ſame time writing to the emperor, and the king of France, to aſſure them, that, if he was elected

ſupreme

ſupreme Pontiff, they ſhould meet with ſuch friendly and equitable treatment as they could expect from no other quarter. The former of theſe princes, indeed, was bound by promiſes which he had repeatedly given him, to aſſiſt Wolſey in procuring the papacy; but, before the meſſenger arrived at Rome, the election was over, and Adrian, biſhop of Tortoſa, who had been the emperor's tutor, was choſen; though Wolſey, upon different ſcrutinies, had nine, twelve, and nineteen voices.

He was, probably, chagrined at the behaviour of Charles V. who had openly violated his word with him; yet ſmothering his reſentment for the preſent, when the emperor made a ſecond viſit to England (partly to appeaſe him, whom he feared to have offended), the cardinal very readily accepted his excuſes; and on Adrian's death, which happened ſome years after, he applied again for Charles's intereſt, which was poſitively engaged to him for the next vacancy: but though this application was backed by a recommendatory letter under Henry's own hand, and Wolſey, knowing the power of gold in the conclave, had taken care to work ſufficiently with that engine; his hopes, however, of the pontificate were a ſecond time rendered abortive, chiefly owing to his abſence, and his reliance on the emperor, who never intended he ſhould be Pope, though he had ſettled an annual penſion upon him, and at different times treated him with the utmoſt complaiſance and diſtinction, ſtyling him, in his letters, "our moſt dear and ſpecial friend."

In the year 1521, in an aſſembly of prelates and clergy, held at York-houſe, the doctrines of Luther were condemned: forty-two of his errors were enumerated; and cardinal Wolſey publiſhed the pope's bull againſt Luther, and ordered all perſons,

on pain of excommunication, to bring in all the books of Luther in their hands. But though Wolſey was thus concerned in cauſing the doctrines of Luther to be condemned, it appears by an article of his impeachment, that he was no perſecutor of heretics; for he is accuſed of remiſſneſs on that head, by means of which Lutheraniſm had gained ground.

The pride and oſtentation of the cardinal, together with his unbounded power, had raiſed him many powerful enemies, eſpecially amongſt the nobility, whom he affected to treat with arrogance and contempt. This behaviour was openly reſented by Edward Stafford, duke of Buckingham, the only courtier who ventured to oppoſe him. Wolſey therefore reſolved to ſacrifice this great man, whoſe diſcontent he apprehended might have ſome effect upon the king. The duke of Buckingham was one of the greateſt ſubjects of the kingdom, highly in favour with the people, and in poſſeſſion of a poſt which gave him a power of controuling the actions even of the ſovereign. He was hereditary high conſtable of England, an office which was aboliſhed at his death, and perhaps was one cauſe of haſtening it: for Henry had often expreſſed his jealouſy of Buckingham's official authority. Indeed, the ceremonial obſerved by the high conſtable at the coronation had been very diſguſtful to this arbitrary prince. It was cuſtomary for the conſtable to receive a ſword from our kings, which holding in his hand, he pronounced aloud, "With this ſword, I will defend thee againſt all thine enemies, if thou governeſt according to law; and, with this ſword, I and the people of England will depoſe thee, if thou breakeſt thy coronation oath." The duke having let fall ſome imprudent expreſſions in private company, that, if the king ſhould die without

iſſue,

iſſue, he would lay claim to the crown, as the deſcendant of Anne of Glouceſter, grand-daughter to Edward III. in which caſe he would puniſh Wolſey according to his demerits; the cardinal by his ſpies obtained farther intelligence, from the duke's domeſtics, of his correſponding with one Hopkins, a monk and pretended prophet, who had given him hopes of ſucceeding to the crown. This indiſcretion, combining with the nature of his office, and his public diſapprobation of the favourite, revived Henry's ſuſpicions, and prevented him from diſcovering that the duke was a devoted victim to the cardinal's reſentment. Wolſey having collected materials for an impeachment, and deprived the duke of his two principal friends, the earl of Northumberland his father-in-law, whom he had committed to the Tower, on a ſlight pretext, and the earl of Surry his ſon-in-law, whom he had ſent governor to Ireland; he cauſed him to be arreſted, and accuſed of high treaſon, of which being convicted by a very thin and partial houſe of peers, he was beheaded on the 13th of May. From this moment Wolſey loſt the little remaining credit he had with the people of England, who openly libelled him for this act of tyrannic cruelty. The emperor, upon hearing of the duke's death, ſaid, "that the butcher's dog had worried the faireſt hart in England."

At this period, the emperor and the French being at variance made Henry the umpire to decide their quarrel. Upon this occaſion, the king ſent Wolſey in quality of mediator, in his name, and veſted with full power to treat with the plenipotentiaries of the contending princes at Calais. The conferences were opened on the 4th of Auguſt; but Wolſey countenanced the emperor in ſuch unreaſonable demands, that the French miniſters rejected them; and Wolſey then paid a viſit to the emperor at Bruges, where he was received with all

the honours due to royalty, and concluded an offenſive alliance, in his maſter's name, with the emperor againſt France. Henry by this treaty promiſed to invade France, the following ſummer, with 40,000 men, and betrothed to the emperor the princeſs Mary, his only child. If any thing could have diſgraced the cardinal at this time, this extravagant alliance muſt have effected it; being not only contrary to the true intereſts of the kingdom, but having a tendency to render it dependant on the emperor, by his marrying the heireſs of the crown. War was declared againſt France in 1522, and this ſhameful treaty proved in the end one cauſe of the cardinal's diſgrace: for, in order to maintain the incidental charges of the war, the king by the advice of Wolſey exacted a general loan from his ſubjects, amounting to one tenth of the effects of the laity, and one fourth of thoſe of the clergy; which, ſays Rapin, excited general clamours againſt the cardinal throughout the kingdom; but, on the tax being more gently levied than it was at firſt intended, the ſtorm blew over for the preſent; though another event occaſioned ſome fruitleſs complaints againſt him.

Among other branches of erudition, he founded the firſt Greek profeſſorſhip at Oxford, but, not thinking that a ſufficient mark of his eſteem, in the year 1525 he determined to build a college, as a laſting monument of his zeal and gratitude towards the ſeminary in which he had received his education; and, having obtained the royal aſſent to commence his projected foundation, the firſt ſtone of that magnificent ſtructure, then called Cardinal, but now Chriſt's College, Oxford, was laid, with a ſuperſcription in honour of the founder; the cardinal at the ſame time building a grammar ſchool at Ipſwich, the place of his nativity, to qualify young ſcholars for admittance to it. But in the proſecution of theſe ſchemes he ſtruck upon a dangerous

dangerous rock; for, having raiſed his college on the ſcite of a priory, diſſolved and given him by the king for that purpoſe, he alſo procured authority to ſuppreſs ſeveral monaſteries in different parts of the kingdom, in order to ſupport his new ſociety. Indeed, the pope's bulls, which were ſent over to confirm theſe grants, had often been a ſanction for committing much greater offences: however, his ſeizing upon the revenues of religious houſes was looked upon as ſacrilege; and the king for the firſt time openly approving the diſcontent of the people againſt him, ſeveral ſatires were publiſhed reflecting on Wolſey's conduct. But it does not appear that he thought it worth his while to enquire after any of the authors, notwithſtanding Skelton, the poet laureat, was ſo apprehenſive on account of ſome ſcurrilous verſes of his writing, that he took refuge in the ſanctuary, to avoid the cardinal's reſentment.

Wolſey, however, about this time, had gained a freſh aſcendancy over his ſovereign by a ſecret tie, known only to a very few perſons about the court. In the courſe of this year, a young lady was introduced at the Engliſh court, the daughter of Sir Thomas Boleyn, or Bullen; who having been formerly in the ſervice of the queen of France, Henry's ſiſter, was received by queen Catherine as one of her maids of honour. It is ſaid, that the king no ſooner ſaw her, than he was ſtruck with her beauty; however, his paſſion lay concealed for ſome time, and was firſt diſcovered by the following accident.

The cardinal's revenue, and manner of living, in all reſpects, equalled the ſtate of a ſovereign prince. His houſhold conſiſted of eight hundred perſons, many of whom were knights and gentlemen, and even ſome of the nobility fixed their children in his family, as a place of education, ſuffering them to bear offices as his domeſtics. Among theſe was the earl of Northumberland, whoſe

whose son, the lord Percy, frequently attending the cardinal to court, had there an opportunity of conversing with the ladies: and he addressed Mrs. Boleyn, in particular, with so much persuasive eloquence, that in the end he gained her affections, and they were privately affianced to each other. Yet was not their amour conducted so secretly but it came to the king's ears. The violence of his temper immediately broke out; he ordered Wolsey to send for the earl of Northumberland; and the young nobleman being severely rebuked by his father for the indiscretion he had been guilty of, the affair ended in a formal dissolution of the contract, the marriage of Lord Percy to a daughter of the earl of Shrewsbury's, and the dismission of Anne Boleyn from court to her relations in the country. But the impetuosity of the king's passion daily increasing, he could not long bear her out of his sight; she was therefore recalled from her banishment; but, prior to that event, a remarkable circumstance happened, which gave rise to the subsequent proceedings in relation to the divorce, and was another cause of Wolsey's disgrace.

In the year 1527, ambassadors came from France, in order to conclude several treaties betwen Henry, who had abandoned the emperor's party, and the French king; one of which was, that Francis, or his son the Duke of Orleans, should espouse the princess Mary, Henry's only daughter; the commissioners met several times, and adjusted all points to mutual satisfaction; but in proceeding upon this article some dispute arose. The bishop of Tarboe, one of the French king's plenipotentiaries, said, "he could not help having some "doubts about the princess Mary's legitimacy, on "account of her being the daughter of queen "Catherine, who had formerly been married to "prince Arthur:" and, in short, he gave broad hints, that the king had committed an unlawful

act in marrying his brother's widow. Whether this objection was ſtarted by previous agreement, in order to ſerve the king's ſecret purpoſes, we cannot ſay: however, it is certain he made a handle of it, to excuſe his ſubſequent proceedings; and from this time openly avowing his affections to Anne Boleyn, the courtiers worſhiped her as the riſing ſun, through whoſe influence alone the royal favour was to be raiſed and cultivated.

Wolſey could not be blind to the progreſs this fair favourite was making in his maſter's heart; though in all probability he at firſt thought the king meant no more than to have an intrigue with her, with reſpect to which kind of intercourſe, it is well known, his eminency entertained not the moſt evangelical notions. He bowed with the crowd therefore, and left nothing untried that might engage the new miſtreſs to his intereſt; but, when he found by ſome words his Majeſty let fall, that not being able to obtain the favours he ſought from her on any other terms than thoſe of wedlock, he was determined at all events to gratify his paſſion; there was no argument poſſible to divert the king from his intention, that the cardinal did not uſe; nay, he often repeated his prayers and intreaties on his knees. But his zeal was far from being pleaſing to Henry, who could not bear any thing like reſtraint: and this oppoſition to her advancement may alſo account for the ill will Anne Boleyn afterwards bore the cardinal: though, upon her ſecond appearance in the royal family, ſhe for ſome time carried it very fairly towards him; and wrote him ſeveral kind and reſpectful letters, which are yet to be ſeen under her own hand.

It is not to be wondered at, that the cardinal's ſecret enemies at court ſhould embrace ſo favourable an opportunity as this appeared, to undermine a man whom they durſt not openly attack; for it

was

was dangerous meddling with Henry, where his prepoſſeſſions were to be removed. They pitched upon Anne Boleyn, therefore, (whoſe averſion to Wolſey they were not unacquainted with) as the propereſt engine to work with: and an occaſion offering ſhortly after, to remove the miniſter at a diſtance from the king, they took care to improve that advantage as the moſt neceſſary meaſure for promoting the ſucceſs of their deſigns. This year the wars in Italy had been carried to great extremity. The city of Rome was ſacked by German ſoldiers; and Clement VII. was actually in captivity to the emperor. Both Henry and his premier expreſſed great uneaſineſs at this diſaſter; and the cardinal having diſtinguiſhed himſelf in ſeveral embaſſies to foreign princes, his foes in the council propoſed that he ſhould be ſent ambaſſador at the preſent critical juncture, in order to induce the court of France to mediate for the pope's releaſe, Francis I. having made his peace with the emperor, as well as to ſettle ſome other matters more immediately relative to the ſtate of the nation.

Whether Wolſey was aware of the plot laid againſt him, is not certain. He had undoubtedly an eager deſire to ſerve the Roman pontiff; and perhaps thought himſelf too firmly riveted in his maſter's eſteem, to be ſhaken by the cabals of a faction. Be this as it may, on the 11th of July he left London, with a numerous and ſplendid retinue; the furniture of the mule on which he himſelf rode being richly embroidered with bits and ſtirrups of maſſy gold. But to give a circumſtantial account of this tranſaction would afford very little entertainment to the reader, who may find it at large in all our Engliſh hiſtories: we ſhall only obſerve therefore, that the cardinal at this time concluded a moſt advantageous treaty with France; that he was entertained on the continent

continent with a magnificence hardly to be paralleled; and that, having ſtaid on his embaſſy about two months, he returned home, where, in ſpight of the endeavours of his enemies in his abſence, he was received by the king with the warmeſt marks of eſteem and approbation.

After this embaſſy, the king's attachment to him ſeemed to increaſe; for, beſides acknowledging the great ſervice the cardinal had done in that affair, in a letter under the royal hand and ſeal, he was pleaſed to appoint a public thankſgiving on the occaſion, going himſelf with his queen, and great numbers of the nobility and gentry, to St. Paul's church; and afterwards in grand proceſſion to dine with the cardinal. It was in conſequence of this embaſſy alſo that he beſtowed on Wolſey the rich biſhopric of Wincheſter; and upon the ſickneſs of Clement VII. the legate endeavouring a third time for the triple crown, he recommended him ſo ſtrenuouſly, that there is hardly any doubt to be made of the king's ſerious inclination to raiſe him to the popedom; and, had not his holineſs unexpectedly recovered, it is highly probable that the cardinal of York would at this time have enjoyed the object of his wiſhes.

In the ſame year that Wolſey went into France, and not many weeks after his return, the French king ſent ambaſſadors to Henry, in order to ratify the treaties made between the two crowns. On this occaſion, Wolſey took upon him to regulate the reception given to the foreigners; and certainly, if we may credit the report of Cavendiſh, who was an eye-witneſs to all that paſſed during their ſtay in England, theſe ambaſſadors were entertained with a coſt and ſumptuouſneſs utterly unknown to modern times; banquets, balls, tournaments, diſtinguiſhed every day; and,

as

as it was one of the laſt efforts of his miniſterial ſplendor, we ſhall inſert the particulars of one of the magnificent and ſumptuous entertainments given by the cardinal at Hampton court to theſe ambaſſadors of Francis I. "The cardinal having commanded his purveyors to ſpare no expence or pains, the appointed day being come, the company aſſembled about noon, from which time, till that of ſupper, they hunted in one of the king's parks, within three miles of Hampton; on their return, which was not till evening, every perſon was conveyed to a different apartment, each being furniſhed with fire and wine, and no leſs than two hundred and eighty beds in the whole, where they ſtayed till they were ſummoned to the banqueting rooms.

"Theſe were all ſet out in a very ſplendid manner, being hung with cloth of gold and ſilver, and having rich luſtres deſcending from the cielings, with large ſconces of ſilver, gilt, and filled with wax lights, which were fixed againſt the walls. But the preſence chamber exceeded all the reſt; where was fixed a ſumptuous canopy, under which was the table placed by itſelf for the cardinal; here were the great bouffets and ſide-boards loaded with gold and ſilver plate, which caſt ſuch a brightneſs by the reflection of the tapers, as was quite aſtoniſhing; here alſo the gentlemen of the cardinal's houſhold, richly dreſſed, waited to ſerve, and all things thus prepared, the trumpets being ſounded, the gueſts came in to ſupper; which conſiſted of ſuch abundance, both of different meats and cookery, as ſuprized the French ambaſſadors, who were ſo charmed with the ſplendor of what they ſaw, and the ſweetneſs of the muſic they heard playing on every ſide of them, that they ſeemed wrapt in heavenly paradiſe.

"Now

" Now all this time the cardinal was abſent ; " but on the appearance of the ſecond courſe, " he ſuddenly came in among them booted and " ſpurred. All the company attempted to riſe : " but his eminency deſiring they would keep their " places, he ſat down at his own table in his " riding dreſs, as he was, and grew as merry and " agreeable as he ever had been known in his life. " This ſecond courſe (Cavendiſh obſerves) muſt " have been the fineſt thing the Frenchmen ever " ſaw ; but the rareſt curioſity in it (adds he) at " which they all wondered, and indeed was wor- " thy of wonder, was a caſtle with images in the " ſame, like St. Paul's church, for the model of " it, where were beaſts, birds, fowls, perſonages " moſt excellently made, ſome fighting with " ſwords, ſome with guns, others with croſs- " bows, ſome dancing with ladies, ſome on horſe- " back with compleat armour, juſting with long " and ſharp ſpears, and many other ſtrange de- " vices, which I cannot deſcribe. Amongſt all I " noted, there was a cheſs board, made of ſpice- " plate, with men of the ſame, and of good pro- " portion. And becauſe the Frenchmen are very " expert at that ſport, my lord cardinal gave that " ſame to a French gentleman, commanding that " there ſhould be made a good caſe to convey the " ſame into his country.

" Then the cardinal called for a great gold cup " filled with wine ; and pulling off his cap, ſaid, " ' I drink a health to the king my ſovereign, and " next unto the king your maſter. And when he " had taken a hearty draught, he deſired the prin- " cipal ambaſſador to pledge him.' And ſo all the " lords pledged the health in order. Thus was " the night ſpent in great harmony and good hu- " mour, till many of the company were obliged " to be led to their beds ; and the next day hav-

" ing

" ing ſtayed to dine with the cardinal, the am-
" baſſadors departed towards Windſor, where
" they were treated, before their going into their
" own country, in a manner ſtill more magnifi-
" cent, by the king."

But nothing more plainly ſhews the good terms on which Wolſey ſtood with his maſter, after his laſt return from France, than the frequent viſits Henry paid him at his palace at Hampton-court; which in the year 1528 was completely finiſhed, and elegantly furniſhed. His majeſty was greatly taken both with the ſituation and beauty of the edifice: upon this Wolſey very generouſly made him a preſent of it; and the king, highly pleaſed with the gift, gave him in return his royal palace of Richmond.

Thus we have conducted Wolſey from his birth to the utmoſt ſummit of his fortune: we muſt now follow him again down the hill, in which, as it generally happens, his progreſs was much more rapid than in going up, even expeditious as was his aſcent

" Queen Catherine's years adding to her tem-
" per, which was naturally grave, made her now
" become more diſtaſteful than ever to king Hen-
" ry; his paſſion for Anne Boleyn too, who, find-
" ing the love he had for her, managed her at-
" tractions with the utmoſt art of coquetry, was
" greatly augmented; ſo that fluctuating between
" the thoughts of a miſtreſs and a wife, Henry
" was ſo entangled, that, rather than be diſap-
" pointed of the one, he reſolved to rid himſelf of
" the other." Cardinal Wolſey ſaw it was in vain to put this notion out of his head; not caring therefore to engage too far in ſo weighty a buſineſs alone, he, with the king's permiſſion, by his own legantine authority, iſſued writs to ſummon all the biſhops, with the moſt learned men of both

both univerſities, to conſult on his majeſty's caſe. But theſe counſellors thinking the point too nice for them to determine, in the end, the pope was applied to, who, in compliance with the king's requeſt, ſent cardinal Campeggio into England, that he might, in conjunction with Wolſey, ſit in judgment, and decide whether Henry's marriage with Catherine was lawful or not. But, firſt, the king called an aſſembly of all the great men in the kingdom, both ſpiritual and temporal, beſides others of inferior degree, and made them a ſpeech, in which he endeavoured to account for and excuſe the proceedings he was going upon, laying the greateſt ſtreſs upon conſcience, and the dreadful horrors of mind he had ſuffered ever ſince the French ambaſſadors had queſtioned the lady Mary's legitimacy, which made him fear that a marriage with his brother's relict was by divine law prohibited. However, he ſaid, he ſubmitted every thing to the wiſdom of the pope's legates, who were authorized by his holineſs to determine this important cauſe; and the meaſures he was already determined to take being thus artfully prepared, the legantine court was opened on the 21ſt of June following.

But the circumſtances of this famous trial are well known. The queen being a woman of reſolute mind, proteſted againſt the legates, as incompetent judges; ſhe appealed to the king for her conjugal fidelity; went out of court, and would never return to it more. The legates went on according to the forms of law, though the queen appealed from them to the pope, and excepted both to the place, to the judges, and to her lawyers. The king would not ſuffer the cauſe to be removed to Rome, and Campeggio left England. But theſe incidents happened in a regular ſeries; and many attempts were made to bring the queen to an eaſy compliance

compliance with his majesty's pleasure, though in vain. Hence it followed, that the public was divided; some pitied Henry, but more had compassion for Catherine: and as Wolsey had now brought himself, by his pride, into universal odium with the people, while the abettors of the divorce charged all the difficulties laid in its way to his artifice, the partizans on the other side were as unanimous in condemning him, for prompting his master to so iniquitous a piece of violence. But of this last charge the cardinal fully cleared himself, by calling on king Henry, in open court, to witness to his innocence; when the king declared, he had always advised him against it, which indeed he might do with a safe conscience; and for that reason he was jealous of Wolsey's being a secret agent in the protraction of the cause; for which he consigned him to destruction.

Indeed, it was apparent, on the breaking up of the court, that Wolsey had nothing favourable to expect from that quarter; for the duke of Suffolk, by the king's direction, coming towards the bench where Wolsey and Campeggio sat, said, with a haughty tone and furious countenance, "It was never thus in England till we had cardinals among us." To which cardinal Wolsey soberly replied; "Sir, of all men in this realm, you have the least cause to dispraise cardinals; for if I, poor cardinal, had not been, you should not at this present have had a head upon your shoulders;" alluding to the duke's marriage with the king's sister, which at first greatly incensed Henry.

On the removal of his cause to Rome, the king was not only enraged, but afflicted: and Hall, Stow, Rapin, and Burnet, affirm, that he resolved on a progress into the country, thereby to dispel his melancholy. For that end he set

out,

out, attended by his royal retinue; and coming to Grafton in Northamptonſhire, he was there attended by Wolſey and Campeggio, the latter of whom came to take his leave before he returned into Italy. This was on a Sunday; and there were many wagers laid among the courtiers, that the king would not ſpeak to cardinal Wolſey. But here his foes were diſappointed; the king not only ſpoke to him, but received him with a ſmiling countenance: and having talked to him ſome time aſide at the window, he ſaid, "Go to your dinner, and take my lord cardinal to keep you company, and after dinner I will talk with you farther." With which words Henry retired to dine with Anne Boleyn, who was with him in his progreſs; and the cardinals ſat down at a table prepared in the preſence-chamber for them, and other lords. There is ſomething curious in the account which Cavendiſh gives us, from one of the perſons, who waited at table, of the king and his miſtreſs's diſcourſe at dinner. It referred to Wolſey; and Anne Boleyn being as angry as ſhe durſt at the king's gracious behaviour to him, ſhe ſaid, "Sir, is it not a marvellous thing, to ſee into what great debt and danger he hath brought you with all your ſubjects?" How ſo? replied the king. "Forſooth, ſaid ſhe, there is not a man in all your whole realm of England to whom he hath not indebted you." Which words ſhe ſpoke, becauſe the king had formerly, through the cardinal's advice, raiſed money on the people by way of loan, which had been a very unpopular meaſure; but the king exculpated his miniſter, by ſaying, "Well, well, for that matter there was no blame in him; for I know it better than you, or any elſe." "Nay, but (cried the lady) beſides that, what exploits hath he wrought in ſeveral parts of this realm! There is never a no-

bleman,

bleman, but, if he had done as much as he hath done, were well worthy to lose his head; nay, if my lord of Norfolk, my lord of Suffolk, or my father, had done much less, they should have lost their heads ere this." "Then I perceive (said the king) you are none of my lord cardinal's friends." "Why, Sir, (answered she) I have no cause, nor any that love you; no more hath your grace, if you did well consider his indirect and unlawful doings." During this conversation in the king's chamber, the cardinal was not treated with much less asperity by the duke of Norfolk without; so that every hand appeared ready to pull down a falling favourite, though the king consulted with him four hours that same evening, which vexed many; but, at night, when the cardinal's servants came to prepare a lodging for him, they were told there was no room: so that his eminency was obliged to lie at the house of one Mr. Empston, at some distance in the country; and in the morning, when he came to court (tho' he had his majesty's command to attend him over night) he found the king just ready to mount his horse, who, without taking any farther notice, coldly ordered him to consult with the lords of the council. This was contrived by Anne Boleyn, who rode out with the king; and, in order to prevent his majesty's return before the cardinal went away, she took care to provide an entertainment for him at Hanwell-park.

The king had no sooner left Wolsey in this abrupt manner, than the cardinal saw his prosperity was at an end; but he was too wise to expose himself to the raillery of the courtiers, by appearing humbled or terrified at his approaching disgrace. Immediately after dinner he set out with his colleague for London, from whence, in a few days, Campeggio took his journey to Rome. But

a report prevailing, that in his baggage he had concealed, and was carrying off, a conſiderable treaſure belonging to cardinal Wolſey, the cuſtom-houſe officers, by the king's order, ſtopt him at Dover, and made ſo thorough a ſearch, that the legate complained of the inſult offered to his character, though to no other purpoſe than to receive a rebuke from the king, for daring to aſſume any character in his dominions, without his particular licence; ſo that the Italian prelate was glad to get off unmoleſted at any rate. As for Wolſey, though he had the king's commiſſion for acting as legate in England, that was afterwards brought againſt him, among a number of other crimes, very little better founded; and ſuch was the king's eagerneſs to begin with him, that he had ſcarcely patience to wait till Campeggio ſet ſail.

It was now term-time, and Wolſey, on the firſt day, went to the court of chancery, in his uſual ſtate, but after that never ſat there more. On the 18th of October 1529, the dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk came to his houſe at Weſtminſter, and in the king's name demanded the great ſeal: at the ſame time letting him know, that he ſhould immediately depart to his ſeat at Eſher. However, he told their lordſhips, that he held the place of chancellor by patent for life; and that, as he had received the ſeal from his majeſty's own hands, into thoſe alone he would deliver it. The noblemen were extremely offended at this refuſal, but the chancellor was poſitive: but, the dukes coming again the next day, with a peremptory command to the cardinal, to obey his majeſty without the leaſt demur, he at laſt conſented; though not without ſome tart reflections on the conduct of the two dukes, who, with good grounds, were ſuſpected to have the chief hand in his ruin.

The fatal buſineſs being thus commenced, the cardinal proceeded with great coolneſs and ſubmiſſion. He called all his officers before him, and had an immediate inventory taken of every thing he was worth; and the ſeveral moveables being brought out and ſet in a great gallery and the chamber adjoining, he left them all for the king. Indeed his treaſury reſembled that of an Eaſtern monarch, rather than an European ſubject; for, in the firſt place, there were ſet in the gallery ſeveral tables, on which were piled an infinite variety of rich ſtuffs, with cloths and ſilks of all colours and manufactures; there were a thouſand pieces of Holland; and all the hangings of his great rooms were gold and ſilver arras; with the moſt magnificent robes and coats that he had bought for the uſe of his two colleges at Oxford and Ipſwich. But theſe were trifles to what was to be ſeen in his chambers: there were ſet very large tables, wholly covered with plate, a great part of which was ſolid gold, all the reſt of his goods and furniture bearing an equal proportion; ſo that it is not improbable that his known opulence was no ſmall inducement to the perſecution againſt him. All things thus ſettled, he prepared to withdraw to Eſher; but juſt as he was going, Sir William Gaſcoigne, his treaſurer, came up, and told him, it was rumoured abroad, that he was to go directly to the Tower: to which the cardinal replied, with ſome diſſatisfaction at Sir William's credulity, and unkindneſs, in telling him every light ſtory; "that he had done no-"thing to deſerve impriſonment, but, having "received all he poſſeſſed of the king, it was but "reaſonable that he ſhould return it to him "again."

He then took boat, having with him moſt of his ſervants, with ſome furniture and proviſions, and di-

directed his course towards Putney. Upon this occasion, the Thames was crowded with spectators on both sides, and a vast number of boats appeared on the river, in hopes of seeing the cardinal carried to the Tower; and it is almost incredible to tell what joy the common people expressed on that occasion, who in prosperity followed him with applause and blessings. Being landed at Putney, he immediately mounted his mule, his servants and attendants being on horseback; but he was scarcely got to the foot of the hill, on the other side of the town, when he was overtaken by Sir John Norris, one of the gentlemen of the bed-chamber, who dismounted his horse, and saluting his eminence in his majesty's name, told him "he was sent express to assure "him, that he was as much in the king's favour "as ever: that this disgrace was only to serve a "turn, and please some sort of people; bidding "him be of good courage, for, as his majesty "was able, so he was willing, to make up all his "losses." The cardinal, being surprized at this joyful news, directly got off his mule, and falling upon his knees in the dirty highway, he betrayed an extravagance of transport, at the appearance of returning to favour, quite unbecoming a man. He pulled off his hat, praised the king's goodness, and embraced Sir John Norris over and over; after which, being again mounted, and riding towards Esher, as they conversed on the way, Norris pulled out a gold ring, set with a very rich stone, which he presented to the cardinal in the king's name, in token of his recovered friendship; and Wolsey, in return, taking a gold cross from about his neck, in which a piece of the Holy Cross (as it was said) was inclosed, bestowed it on Sir John, as a perpetual remembrance of his service. Then, bethinking himself

ſelf of what would be acceptable to the king, he ſent him his fool, Patch, whom ſix of his talleſt yeomen were ſcarcely able to conduct, ſo great a reluctance he had to part with his old maſter: but with this preſent the king appeared very much pleaſed.

But after all theſe great promiſes from the king, it appears that nothing was meant by them; for the cardinal no ſooner reached his retreat, than he was intirely neglected, being ſuffered to continue there three weeks, without either beds, table-cloths, or diſhes to eat his meat upon; neither had he money to buy any; ſo that he muſt infallibly have periſhed, had it not been for the ſupplies the country people ſent to him. In theſe ſad circumſtances his ſecretary one day told him, that he ought in conſcience to conſider him and his other ſervants, who had never forſook him in weal or woe. "Alas! Thomas," ſaid the cardinal, "you know I have nothing to give you "nor them; which makes me both aſhamed and "ſorry." After which, by his ſecretary's advice, borrowing ſome money of his chaplains, many of whom he had preferred to great benefices, he had all his ſervants called up before him, and beheld them for ſome time with great tenderneſs, whilſt his ſilence, and the tears that ran down his cheeks, teſtified his inward affliction. At length, perceiving his ſervants alſo weep very plentifully, he made them a moſt moving ſpeech; in which he lamented that he had not done ſo much for them, in his proſperity, as he might have done; though he excuſed himſelf by the great promptneſs that there might be in people, to ſay, there was no office would eſcape the rapacity of the cardinal. He then deplored his preſent ſituation, which had left him nothing but the bare cloaths upon his back, ſo that he was without any means

means of acknowledging their ſervices: however, he thanked them all heartily, and, giving them their wages and his bleſſing, told them they had better provide for themſelves. After this, moſt of his ſervants left him, except Cavendiſh, who ſtayed about his perſon; and Cromwell, who went to London, to take care of his affairs there.

It was now that the cardinal began to find out, in ſpite of ſpecious pretences, how little, in reality, the king was his friend; for, from the rigorous proceedings commenced againſt him at law, it was apparent, that his majeſty reſolved to have him at his mercy, upon the ſtatute of premunire, though it appeared to every one, that to let this law looſe upon him would be the greateſt injuſtice, in as much as he was authorized by the king to execute his legantine commiſſion: yet, at the importunity of ſeveral lords of the council, he declined pleading to the information exhibited againſt him, and threw himſelf entirely on the king's mercy, who, he ſaid, "had a conſcience to judge and underſtand how far he merited puniſhment for the matter alleged againſt him;" then judgement was ſigned. However, he received aſſurances from Henry, that he would not proceed to the utmoſt rigour of the law, and, ſoon after, he had part of his goods given to him, and obtained a protection from the king; but ſtill diligent enquiry was making after all his eſtates and effects, and whenever any were found, they were immediately confiſcated to his majeſty's uſe.

It ſeems a hard matter to reconcile the different parts of Henry's behaviour in diſcarding his miniſter. He found he was no longer his creature, perhaps, and therefore he ceaſed to be his favourite; and yet he ſeems to have been aſhamed of the part he was acting againſt a man whom he once ſo highly favoured, by letting him down with a ſeem-

ing reluctance, and qualifying every ſtep he fell with ſome act of pretended tenderneſs and compaſſion. Thus in the parliament which was called on the third of November, after Wolſey's diſgrace, when the lords exhibited four and forty articles of impeachment againſt him, and the bill (through the management of the cardinal's ſecretary) was rejected in the lower houſe, the king expreſſed great ſatisfaction at it; and indeed all the articles were built on ſo weak, and many of them upon ſo unjuſt, a foundation, that lord Herbert ſays, no miniſter was ever diſplaced with leſs to allege againſt him. In ſome of theſe articles, it was made a capital offence to have done ſeveral things which he did by the king's expreſs command, and under his licence; while others carried an air of ridiculouſneſs and abſurdity: and even thoſe which bore the beſt face contained, at the utmoſt, but trifles, and errors rather than crimes. But though this ill-ſupported charge fell to the ground; nay, though the king, in one of his relenting fits, granted him the moſt ample pardon for all crimes which he might be ſuppoſed to have committed againſt the crown that ever king granted to a ſubject, the cardinal's ill fortune ſtill continued to purſue him with accumulated rage; nor would his hard-hearted maſter be ſatisfied, while he had any thing left, that it was poſſible to wring from him.

Henry inſiſted upon his ſigning a reſignation of York-houſe, and he was obliged to do it. He alſo forced him to make over, by deed of gift, the revenues of the biſhoprick of Wincheſter, and, after all, would not ſo much as pay his debts, nor allow him ſufficient to ſubſiſt upon; ſo that, with one vexation or other, Wolſey was at length quite harraſſed out, and fell dangerouſly ill of a violent fever. But the cardinal's indiſpoſition was no

fooner

ſooner mentioned at court, than the king expreſſed the greateſt concern and uneaſineſs. He declared he would not loſe him for twenty thouſand pounds; ordered one of his own phyſicians to attend him; and, being told that nothing was ſo likely to promote a recovery as ſome mark of favour from the royal hand, he not only ſent him a ring with his own picture in it, from himſelf, but made Anne Boleyn take the gold etwee from her ſide, and, with many obliging expreſſions, entreated the cardinal's acceptance of it, as a token of her eſteem and affection. Yet Wolſey was no ſooner up again, than the proſpect grew as gloomy as ever: the king diſſolved both his colleges, though in the humbleſt and moſt earneſt manner he beſought him to ſpare them: and the cardinal having, in his proſperity, at a great expence, built himſelf a tomb, which was not finiſhed at the time of his fall, his majeſty ſeized that alſo; nor would he be prevailed on to reſtore it, though his old favourite begged it of him in the moving term of a burying place, which, "on account of his great heavineſs, he ſaid, he "was ſoon likely to want." However, the king was not ſo inflexible to all his requeſts; for the cardinal repreſenting about this time, that the air of Eſher was very prejudicial to his conſtitution, he was immediately permitted to remove to Richmond, and a ſum of money was iſſued from the Treaſury, to make his circumſtances a little more eaſy.

His removal to Richmond made his enemies very uneaſy. They diſliked ſuch a proximity to the court, and were in continual fear, leſt Henry ſhould relapſe into his former attachment, and, one time or other, call his diſcarded miniſter again into favour. In theſe thoughts, they determined to move him to a greater diſtance; and conſider-

ing his province in the North as the properest place for his future residence, they found no great difficulty in procuring an order from Henry for his immediately repairing thither. The poor cardinal would fain have retired no farther than Winchester, but no place but Yorkshire would do; and on his being a little tardy to set out, on account of money which he waited for, and because there was no exact time fixed for his journey, the duke of Norfolk one day meeting his secretary Cromwell, said to him, "Go, tell thy master, "that unless he quickly removes towards the "North, I will tear him to pieces with my teeth;" which being repeated to the cardinal, "Then," cried he, "it is time for me to be going;" and accordingly he left Richmond in a few days after, taking the road for his archiepiscopal seat at Cawood.

No sooner was he arrived and settled in this place, than he gave himself up entirely to devotion and his pastoral charge, daily distributing to the poor, and keeping an hospitable table for all comers. His custom was, to visit all the little parish-churches round about, in which one of his chaplains generally preached; and sometimes he condescended to dine at an honest farmer's house, where he was constantly surrounded with a great number of indigent people, whom he conversed with, and relieved. Finding his palace also very much out of repair, he at one time engaged above three hundred workmen and labourers in fitting it up: but such was the malignity of his enemies at court, that they interpreted this to his disadvantage, Cromwell writing to him in one of his letters from London, "Some there be that do allege "your grace keeps too great a house and family, "and that you are continually building: for the "love of God, therefore, have respect, and refrain."

In

In conſequence of this admonition, the cardinal began to contract his manner of living: but his enemies, who were reſolved on his deſtruction, ſoon found ſomething elſe to lay hold of in the great preparations which, contrary to his warmeſt intreaties, and in ſome meaſure without his knowledge, the dean and chapter of his cathedral church were making for his ſolemn inſtallation; inſomuch, that for a week before the day fixed for that ceremony, people from all parts of the kingdom crowded out of curioſity to the city of York.

But now an accident happened, which ſhewed, that this great man was the ſlave of ſuperſtition. "On All Saints day, the cardinal being at dinner with his chaplains, doctor Auguſtine, a phyſician, cloathed with a very heavy velvet gown, in riſing up puſhed againſt the cardinal's ſilver croſs, placed at the corner of the table, which fell ſo heavy upon the head of doctor Bonner, that the blood came trickling down. Upon this the cardinal immediately retired to his chamber, and ſhaking his head, ſaid, "Malum omen;" which he afterwards interpreted to Cavendiſh upon his death-bed, telling him, that "the croſs repreſented his perſon; doctor Auguſtine, who threw it down, his enemy, and an informer; and the chaplain being wounded imported, that his power was at an end, and death would quickly enſue." But when the earl of Northumberland and Sir Walter Walſh arrived at Cawood to arreſt the cardinal, his words were conſidered by weak men as a prophecy, though in fact they amounted to no more than the well-grounded apprehenſions of a fallen ſtateſman. The earl and Sir Walter were attended by a body of horſe, which plainly beſpoke their commiſſion.

Alighting at the cardinal's gate, they went immediately into the hall, and demanded the keys from the porter: but the man, aſtoniſhed at this

requeſt, refuſed to deliver them without his maſter's order. To prevent any farther diſturbance, therefore, they contented themſelves with taking an oath from him, "That no perſon ſhould go out "or come in till he received farther orders." The cardinal all this while remained ignorant of what paſſed below, care being taken that no one ſhould go up to inform him: however, at laſt, one of the ſervants found means to ſlip by, and told his eminency that the earl of Northumberland was in the hall. Wolſey, being then at dinner, took this for a friendly viſit from his old pupil, and immediately roſe from table, and went down ſtairs to meet the earl. He expreſſed his concern that he had not given him notice of the viſit, that he might have given him a better reception; and taking him by the hand led him to his apartment, the earl's gentleman following, where taking the cardinal aſide to a window, while they were in converſation, Northumberland ſaid, "My lord, "I arreſt you for high treaſon." Upon this the cardinal demanded to ſee his authority; but the earl refuſing to ſhew his commiſſion, Wolſey replied, "I will not then ſubmit to your arreſt." However, Sir Walter Walſh coming up during the debate, whom the cardinal knew, and repeating what the earl had before ſaid, he very readily ſurrendered himſelf.

Being now in cuſtody, Saturday was ſpent in packing up ſome of his effects, and preparing for his journey; but, as ſoon as the country people were informed of what the earl and Walſh had been doing, they ſurrounded the palace, expreſſing the deepeſt concern, for he had always been the protector and friend of the poor; which gave Northumberland and the knight no little uneaſineſs.

On

On Sunday, the first of November, early in the morning, he proceeded on his journey towards London. As soon as he came out of his gate, the people with great lamentation expressed their concern, and followed him for several miles, till the cardinal desired them to depart, and be patient; for that he feared not his enemies, but entirely submitted to the will of Heaven. The first night he lodged at Pomfret Abbey; the next night, with the Black-Friars at Doncaster; and the night following, at Sheffield Park, where he remained eighteen days. Here he was kindly entertained by the earl of Shrewsbury, and had a great respect shewn him by the neighbouring gentlemen, who flocked in to visit him. But being one day at dinner, he was taken very ill with a sudden coldness at his stomach; which apprehending to be an oppression occasioned by wind, he immediately sent to an apothecary for some medicine to expel it, and this gave him ease for the present. But if he was not then poisoned, as some people imagined, either by himself or others, it appears that this disorder, from whatever it originated, was the cause of his death; for he was in so languishing a condition when Sir William Kingston, the lieutenant of the Tower, came to the earl of Shrewsbury's, to take him into custody, and attend him to London, that he was hardly able to walk across the chamber. This circumstance too of being put into the hands of the lieutenant of the Tower gave a great shock to his weakened frame; for when the earl of Shrewsbury ordered Cavendish to tell him of Kingston's arrival in the tenderest manner, that he might take it quietly, and without apprehension, the cardinal clapped his hands on his thigh, and gave a great sigh, saying, "I now see "what is preparing for me." Which expression

ſeems to deſtroy the idea of his having poiſoned himſelf; as it imported a dread of public execution. However, ill and weak as he was, he left the earl of Shrewſbury's the following morning, and by gentle progreſs reached another ſeat of his lordſhip's that night.

Thus he continued three days making ſhort journies, by ſlow progreſs, till on the third at night he arrived at Leiceſter Abbey. Here the abbot and the whole convent came out to meet him, receiving him in the court with great reverence and reſpect; but the cardinal only ſaid, "Father Abbot, "I am come to lay my bones among you;" and riding ſtill on his mule, till he came to the ſtairs of his chamber, he with much difficulty was helped up and put to bed.

This was on Saturday, the 25th of November, and on the Monday following his illneſs was ſo far increaſed, that it was the general opinion of all his attendants he could not live long. On Tueſday morning early, Sir William Kingſton went into his room, and aſked him how he had reſted. The cardinal devoutly anſwered, "I only wait the pleaſure of Heaven to render my poor ſoul into the hands of my Creator." After this, being about the ſpace of an hour at confeſſion, Kingſton came to him a ſecond time; and then Wolſey, finding his diſſolution very nigh, "I pray you "(ſaid he) have me heartily recommended to his "royal majeſty, and beſeech him on my behalf "to call to his remembrance all matters that have "paſſed between us from the beginning, eſpe-"cially with regard to his buſineſs with the queen; "and then will he know in his conſcience, whe-"ther I have offended him. He is a prince of "a moſt royal carriage, and hath a princely "heart; and, rather than he will miſs or want "any

" any part of his will, he will endanger the one half " of his kingdom. I do assure you, that I have " often kneeled before him, sometimes three " hours together, to persuade him from his will " and appetite, but could not prevail. Had I " but served God as diligently as I have served the " king, he would not have given me over in my " grey hairs: but this is the just reward that I must " receive for my indulgent pains and study, not " regarding my service to God, but only to my " prince. Therefore, let me advise you, if you " be one of the privy-council, as by your wisdom " you are fit, take care what you put into the " king's head; for you can never put it out " again." Adding, after a very severe warning against the Lutherans, " Mr. Kingston, farewell; " I wish all things may have good success; my " time draweth on fast." Having uttered these words, his speech failed him; and he died about eight o'clock, the guards being called in to see him expire. Such was the end, on the 29th of November, 1530, of this famous prelate and statesman. After his death he was laid in an oaken coffin, with his face uncovered, that every one might be permitted to view him; and, early in the morning on St. Andrew's day, he was buried in the middle of one of the Abbey chapels.

The cardinal was, as to his person, tall and comely, and very graceful in his air and manner; but he had a blemish in one of his eyes, with a view to hide which defect, he was always painted in profile.

In his ministerial character he displayed eminent abilities; and it is certain, that during his administration he rendered England formidable to all the powers of Europe. But it is as evident, that in his foreign negotiations he was often influenced by his own private views.

It

It has been urged, as a ſtrong preſumption in Wolſey's favour, that the latter part of Henry's reign was more criminal than that in which he governed: "but it may be doubted, ſays Lord Herbert, whether the impreſſions he gave did not occaſion divers irregularities which were obſerved to follow: for he had made it a rule to ſubmit implicitly to the king's pleaſure, and had taught him that pernicious doctrine, that no law had the force to curb his prerogative, which increaſed Henry's arbitrary diſpoſition."

In proſperity, Wolſey was proud, arrogant, and haughty; in adverſity, mean, abject, and cowardly. His vices were of that caſt which moſt diſgrace the ſacred character of a prelate. At the ſame time his virtues were of the public kind; for he greatly promoted and encouraged literature; he patronized and cultivated the polite and uſeful arts; and he was, in general, a liberal friend to the poor.

Upon the whole, he was a very great, but far from a good man.

*** *Authorities.* Life of Wolſey by Sir William Cavendiſh, his gentleman uſher; Britiſh Biography, vol. II. Fiddes's life of Wolſey. Lord Herbert's life of Henry VIII. Rapin's and Hume's hiſtories of England.

THE

THE LIFE OF
SIR THOMAS MORE.

[A. D. 1480, to 1535.]

THOSE authors, who are fond of recording wonders, tell us, that the birth of this great man was preceded by several strange dreams which his mother had during her pregnancy, portending his future fortune; but, without paying any regard to the legends of superstition, it may be affirmed, that his childhood afforded the most lively hopes of what his maturer years accomplished. Of this we have a testimony in the behaviour of cardinal Morton, archbishop of Canterbury, and lord Chancellor of England; for young Thomas More, being, according to the custom of those times, put into his family for education, his grace would often say to the nobility who dined with him; "This boy who waits "at the table, whosoever lives to see it, will "prove a marvellous man." But not to dwell too long upon trifles: according to the best accounts, this excellent man was born in the year 1480, in Milk-street, London; his father, Sir John More, being then a gentleman of established reputation in the law, in which profession he afterwards brought up his son. He sent him to Oxford in 1497, where he remained two years, and then removed to New-Inn, London; and it appears that Mr. More, on his first entrance on business, acquired great reputation at the bar; though, taking an early distaste to that way of life,

he ſuddenly retired to the Charter-houſe, where, giving himſelf up entirely to devotion, he remained ſecluded from the world no leſs than four years.

At this time, he had a ſtrong inclination, not only to take orders, but the vow of a Franciſcan; but his father perſiſting in his deſign of making him a lawyer, his filial ſubmiſſion overcame his inclination to the eccleſiaſtical ſtate. Another motive might be his gay and lively temper, and an amorous inclination, hardly to be ſubdued by the auſteritles he practiſed; on which account dean Colet, his intimate friend and confeſſor, adviſed him to marry; and accordingly he accepted an invitation from Mr. Colt, of Newhall, to reſide ſome time at his houſe. This gentleman had three daughters, and, in the courſe of his viſit, Mr. More took a liking to the ſecond; but it is remarkable, that on being urged by the father to make choice of one of them for a wife, he eſpouſed the eldeſt, merely for being ſuch, that it might be no vexation or diſgrace to her to be paſſed by. Upon his marriage with this lady, who lived with him about ſeven years, he took a houſe in Bucklerſbury, and began once again to practiſe the law. But what greatly contributed to raiſe his reputation was this: Mr. More was not full two-and-twenty years of age, when being elected member of the parliament, called by Henry VII. in 1503, to demand a ſubſidy, and nine fifteenths, for the marriage of his eldeſt daughter, he had an immediate opportunity of diſplaying his talents in the houſe. The majority were againſt this demand; but many of the members, being afraid of the king's diſpleaſure, made no oppoſition: upon which our young lawyer got up, and argued with ſuch ſtrength and clearneſs againſt ſo arbitrary an impoſition, that his majeſty's demand was, in the end, rejected. Mr. Tyler,

Tyler, one of the privy-council, who was present when the speech was made, went immediately to the king, and told him, that a beardless boy had disappointed all his purpose. A prince, tyrannical and avaricious like Henry, could not fail to be much incensed; and we are not to wonder that he should be determined to be revenged on the person who had presumed to oppose the favourite measure of his reign, that of getting money. However, as our patriot had only performed his duty, for which the king could not call him to account, he meanly revenged himself on Sir John, his father, whom he ordered to be imprisoned in the Tower till he had paid a fine of an hundred pounds. But young More, having received information from his friend Mr. Whitford, chaplain to Fox, bishop of Winchester, that the court were laying snares to ensnare him in his practice as a lawyer, thought it prudent to decline the profession, and lived retired till the king's death.

This retirement, however, was of no real disadvantage to him, as he employed his time in improving himself in history, mathematics, and the belles lettres; so that when he emerged again from obscurity, scarcely any cause of importance was tried, in which both parties did not attempt to retain him; but he never would defend a bad cause, for any fee whatever. His first preferment was in the city, being made judge of the Sheriff's court in 1510; and before he was actually engaged in the government service, he was twice appointed, by the consent of Henry VIII. at the suit of the English merchants, their agent, in some causes between them and the foreign merchants of the Steel-yard, in which he acquitted himself with such distinguished honour, that cardinal Wolsey was very solicitous to engage More in his majesty's service. But he was so averse to change the condition

dition of an independent man, for that of a courtier, that the miniſter could not prevail; and the king, for the preſent, was pleaſed to admit of his excuſes. It happened, however, ſome time after, that a great ſhip of the pope's arriving at Southampton, the king claimed it as a forfeiture, upon which the legate demanded a trial, with council for his holineſs, learned in the laws of the kingdom; and, as his majeſty was himſelf a great civilian, he alſo deſired it might be heard in ſome public place, in the royal preſence. Henry acceded to all this, and Mr. More was choſen council on the ſide of the pope; whoſe cauſe he pleaded with ſo much learning and ſucceſs, that the forfeiture which the crown claimed was immediately reſtored, and the conduct of the lawyer univerſally admired and applauded. Indeed, it brought ſo great an addition to his fame, that the king would no longer be induced by any intreaty to diſpenſe with his ſervice, and having no better place at that time vacant, he made him maſter of the requeſts; conferred on him the honour of knighthood ſoon after; appointed him one of his privy-council; and admitted him to the greateſt perſonal familiarity.

It was a cuſtom with the king, ſays the author of the Britiſh Antiquities, after he had performed his devotions upon holydays, to ſend for Sir Thomas More into his cloſet, and there confer with him about aſtronomy, geometry, divinity, and other parts of learning, as well as affairs of ſtate. Upon other occaſions the king would carry him in the night upon the leads, at the top of the palace, to be inſtructed in the variety, courſe, and motions of the heavenly bodies. But this was not the only uſe the king made of his new ſervant. He ſoon found, that he was a man of a chearful diſpoſition, and had a great fund of wit and humour: and, therefore, his majeſty would frequently order

order him to be sent for, to make him and the queen merry at supper. When Sir Thomas perceived that they were so much entertained with his conversation, that he could not once in a month get leave to spend an evening with his wife and children, whom he loved, nor be absent from court two days together, without being sent for by the king, he grew very uneasy at this restraint of his liberty; and so beginning, by little and little, to disuse himself from his former mirth, and somewhat to dissemble his natural temper, he was not so ordinarily called for upon these occasions of merriment. The treasurer of the Exchequer dying in 1520, the king, without any solicitation, conferred this office on Sir Thomas More; and within three years after, a parliament being summoned, in order to raise money for a war with France, he was elected speaker of the House of Commons.

During the sessions, cardinal Wolsey was much offended with the members of the House of Commons, because nothing was said or done there, but immediately it was blown abroad, in every alehouse: on the other hand, the members had an undoubted right, as they thought, to repeat to their friends without doors what had passed within. It happened, however, that a considerable subsidy having been demanded by the king, which Wolsey apprehended would meet with great opposition in the lower house, he was determined to be present when the motion should be made, in order to prevent its being rejected. The house being apprised of his resolution, it was a great while under debate, whether it was best to receive him with a few of his lords only, or with his whole train. The major part of the house inclined to the first: upon which the speaker got up, and said, "Gentlemen, forasmuch as my lord cardinal hath, not long since, laid to our charge the lightness of our tongues,

tongues, it ſhall not, in my judgement, be amiſs to receive him with all his people; that ſo, if he blame us hereafter for things ſpoken out of the houſe, we may lay it upon thoſe that his grace ſhall bring with him." The humour of the ſpeaker's motion being approved, the cardinal was received accordingly. But having ſhewn, in a ſolemn ſpeech, how neceſſary it was for the king's affairs, that the ſubſidies moved for ſhould be granted, and finding that no member made any anſwer, nor ſhewed the leaſt inclination to comply with what he aſked, he quite loſt his temper; and with great indignation ſaid, "Gentlemen, unleſs it be the manner of your houſe, to expreſs your minds in ſuch caſes by your ſpeaker, here is, without doubt, a ſurprizing obſtinate ſilence." He then required the ſpeaker to give him an anſwer to the demand which he had made in the king's name. Upon which Sir Thomas, with great reverence, excuſed their ſilence, as being abaſhed at the preſence of ſo exalted a perſonage. He then proceeded to ſhew, "that it was not agreeable to the antient liberty of the houſe, to make an anſwer to his majeſty's meſſages by any other perſon, how great ſoever, than ſome of their own members;" and in the concluſion, he told his eminence, "That though, as ſpeaker, he was the voice of the commons; yet except every one of them could put their ſeveral judgements in his head, he alone, in ſo weighty a matter, was not able to make a ſufficient anſwer." The cardinal taking offence at the ſpeaker for this evaſive reply, ſuddenly roſe up and departed: perhaps his diſpleaſure was greater, becauſe he knew that Sir Thomas More had ſeconded the motion when it was firſt made: but though that ſpirited patriot thought the ſubſidy abſolutely neceſſary for carrying on the war, he made a diſtinction between the reaſonable demands of the king, and the inſo-

lence

lence of his miniſter; and therefore played off this farce againſt him.

In conſequence of this, however, being a few days after in Wolſey's gallery at Whitehall, his eminence complained vehemently of the ill treatment he gave him; and reproaching him for his ingratitude, ſaid, "Would to God you had been at Rome when I made you ſpeaker!" To which Sir Thomas replied, "Your grace not offended, ſo would I too, for then I ſhould have ſeen an antient and famous city, which I have long deſired to viſit." And then, to divert him from his ill humour, he began to commend the cardinal's gallery, and ſaid, that he liked it better than his other at Hampton-court. But though he thus put an end to his reproaches, he did not cool his reſentment: for afterwards, when the parliament broke up, Wolſey perſuaded the king to name him ambaſſador to Spain, purely with a view of doing him a diſcourteſy, by ſending him into a country which he knew would be diſagreeable to him. However, when his majeſty mentioned his deſign to Sir Thomas, the knight took the liberty to remonſtrate ſo ſtrongly, yet ſo modeſtly againſt it, on account of the climate, that, with a candour and condeſcenſion not uſual to him, Henry was pleaſed to admit of his arguments; aſſuring him withal, that his meaning was not to hurt, but to do him good; and therefore he would think of ſome other perſon for the embaſſy, and employ him another way. Accordingly upon the death of Sir R. Wingfield, in the year 1528, Sir Thomas More was appointed chancellor of the duchy of Lancaſter, and at the ſame time admitted into ſuch an high degree of favour with the king, that his majeſty would ſometimes come, without giving him any notice, to his houſe at Chelſea, in order to enjoy his converſation upon common affairs.

He

He one day made Sir Thomas an unexpected visit of this sort to dinner, and having walked with him in his garden for an hour, with his arm about his neck, it was such a demonstration of kindness and familiarity, that the king being gone, Mr. Roper, one of Sir Thomas's sons-in-law, could not help observing to him, "How happy he must be, to have his prince distinguish him in so particular a manner." To which Sir Thomas replied, "I thank our Lord, son Roper, I find his grace to be my very good master indeed, and I believe that he does as much favour me at present as any subject within this realm; but yet I may tell thee, son, I have no cause to be proud of it; for if my head would win him a castle in France (with which kingdom Henry was then at war) it would not fail to be struck off my shoulders."

It was observed of Sir Thomas More, that the ignorant and the proud, even in the highest station, were those people whom he respected the least; but, on the other hand, he was a patron and a friend to every man of letters, and held almost a continual correspondence with all the literati in Europe. Among foreigners, Erasmus appears to have had the greatest share in his love and confidence; and after a series of mutual letters, expressing their esteem for each other, that great man made a voyage to England, on purpose to enjoy the pleasure of his conversation.

A story is told of their first coming together, which would hardly deserve to be recorded, if it were not related of two such eminent men. The person who conducted Erasmus to London, it seems, had so contrived, that Sir Thomas and he should meet, without knowing it, at the lord-mayor's table, in those days open at all times to men of learning and eminence; when a dispute arising at dinner, Erasmus, in order to display his learning,

learning, endeavoured to defend the wrong ſide of the queſtion; but he was ſo ſharply oppoſed by Sir Thomas, that finding he had to do with an abler man than he ever before met with, he ſaid, in Latin, with ſome vehemence, "You are either More, or nobody." To which Sir Thomas replied, in the ſame language, with great vivacity, "You are either Eraſmus, or the devil." Upon this eclairciſſement, the friends immediately embraced; and afterwards, through the means of Sir Thomas, Eraſmus was much careſſed by the greateſt men in the nation.

It is remarkable, that of all the ſervants and favourites of Henry VIII. he never treated any with ſo much tenderneſs and good-humour, as Sir Thomas More. The anſwer which he made the king on his deſiring his judgement with regard to his marriage with queen Catherine does honour to his memory. Clark and Tonſtal, biſhops of Bath and Durham, with others of the privy-council, having been ordered to conſult with him, "To be plain with your grace," ſaid Sir Thomas, "neither my lord of Durham, nor my lord of Bath, nor myſelf, nor any of your privy-council, being all your ſervants, and greatly indebted to your goodneſs, are in my judgement proper counſellors for your grace upon this point; but, if you pleaſe to underſtand the very truth, you may have ſuch counſellors who, neither for reſpect of their own worldly profit, nor for fear of your princely authority, will deceive you;" and then he named Jerome, Auſtin, and ſeveral other antient fathers, producing the opinions he had collected out of them. Notwithſtanding the king did not approve of what had paſſed, Sir Thomas always uſed ſuch diſcretion in his converſation with his majeſty on this ſubject, that, ſelf-willed as Henry was, he did not take it ill of him, and ſoon after, intending to

proceed

proceed no farther in his divorce, he appointed Sir Thomas, in 1529, together with Tonſtal biſhop of Durham, his friend, ambaſſadors to negotiate a peace between the Emperor, Henry, and the King of France. A peace was accordingly concluded at Cambray; and Sir Thomas procured ſo much greater advantages to the kingdom than were thought poſſible, that, for his eminent ſervices, the king, upon the diſgrace of Wolſey, gave Sir Thomas the great ſeal, on the 25th of October, 1529.

Upon his entrance into the office of chancellor, a ſurprizing change was ſeen by every body: for notwithſtanding Wolſey's great abilities, yet, ſuch was his pride, that he would ſcarcely look upon any of the common rank, and it was difficult to be admitted into his preſence, without bribing his officers and ſervants; whereas a man now preſided in the Court of Chancery, who, the meaner his ſuitors were, the more attentively would he hear the buſineſs, and the more readily diſpatch it. It is ſaid, that one of his ſons-in-law, Mr. Dauncy, found fault with him once, between jeſt and earneſt, for this extraordinary condeſcenſion; adding, "You are ſo ready to hear every "man, poor as well as rich, that there is no "getting any thing under you; whereas, were "you otherwiſe, ſome for friendſhip, ſome for "kindred, and ſome for profit, would gladly have "my intereſt to bring them to you. I know I "ſhould do them wrong if I took any thing from "them, becauſe they might as readily prefer their "ſuits to you themſelves; but this, though I "think it very commendable in you, yet to me, "who am your ſon, I find it not profitable." "You ſay well, ſon," cried the chancellor, "I am glad you are of a conſcience ſo ſcrupulous, but there are many other ways that I may do good to

yourſelf, and pleaſure your friends; and this be aſſured of, upon my faith, that if the parties will call for juſtice at my hands, then, though it were my father, whom I love ſo dearly, ſtood on one ſide, and the devil, whom I hate ſo extremely, ſtood on the other, the cauſe being good, the devil ſhould have it." But as an indubitable proof that Sir Thomas More would not deviate from juſtice in the ſmalleſt matter, for any conſideration, the reader may take the following inſtance. Another of his ſons-in-law, Mr. Heron, having a cauſe depending, was adviſed to put it into arbitration; but he, preſuming on his father's favour, and not agreeing to this propoſal, the chancellor, upon hearing the cauſe, made a decree directly againſt him. No ſubpœna was iſſued, no order granted, but what he ſaw; and having preſided in the court of chancery about two years, ſuch was his application to buſineſs, that on a cauſe being finiſhed, and his calling for the next that was to be heard, he was anſwered, there was not one cauſe more depending; which he ordered immediately to be ſet down on record.

When Sir Thomas More was lord chancellor, his father, Sir John, was one of the oldeſt judges in the King's-Bench; and it was a very unuſual ſight in Weſtminſter-Hall, to ſee two ſuch great ſeats filled by a father and ſon at the ſame time. There was another, however, ſtill more ſurpriſing; for, if the court of King's-Bench was ſitting, when the chancellor came into the Hall, he went firſt into that court, and there kneeling down, in the ſight of every body, aſked his father's bleſſing: and when they happened to meet together at the readings in Lincoln's Inn, he always offered the precedence to his father, though, on account of his ſon's high dignity, Sir John as conſtantly waved it.

Though living much at court, a chearful man and a man of buſineſs, yet it appears that Sir Thomas More had a different ſenſe of religion upon his mind, from what courtiers and men of buſineſs generally have. We are told, in particular, that it was his conſtant cuſtom, beſides his private prayers, to read the Pſalms and Litany with his wife and children in a morning; and every night to go with his whole family into the chapel, and there devoutly read the Pſalms and Collects with them. But becauſe he choſe ſometimes to retire, even from his family, and ſequeſter himſelf from the world, he built, at ſome diſtance from his manſion houſe, a gallery, library, and chapel, where, as on other days, he ſpent ſome time in ſtudy and devotion: ſo on Fridays he continued there the whole day, employing it in ſuch exerciſes as he thought might beſt improve his mind in religious matters. The great offices which he held, and which he always executed with a ſplendor ſuitable to their dignity, obliged him to keep many ſervants; but he never ſuffered any of them to be idle, that they might not acquire a habit of ſloth, and to keep them from gaming, and other profligate courſes, of which idleneſs is the ſource. Let not, however, the reader imagine from hence, that he was a ſour and ſplenetic philoſopher. On the contrary, he was the fartheſt from it in the world; and, in his hours of relaxation from buſineſs, delighted in muſic, and other chaſte amuſements. He was alſo a lover of the polite arts, of which we have an inſtance in his patronage of Hans Holbein, the famous portrait-painter, who being recommended to him by letter from Eraſmus, the chancellor kept him in his houſe till he had painted the portraits of all his family. He then took occaſion to ſhew his pieces to the king; when Henry was ſo ſtruck with the reſemblances, that he aſked

Sir

Sir Thomas, if such an artist was alive, and to be procured for money? To which the generous patron replied, by producing Holbein, who was immediately taken into the king's service, in which he died of the plague, in 1554.

But having proceeded thus far in a panegyric, which truth and justice demanded of us, we must now take the other side of the question, and confess, that, while Sir Thomas was adorned with the gentlest manners, and the purest integrity, he shewed, upon many occasions, a culpable aversion to what he judged to be heresy; which can only be excused upon the principles of conscience, and his general good character. In defence of the Romish faith he wrote several virulent books, in opposition to the propagators of the principles of the Reformation; which act of zeal was so acceptable to the English clergy, that, being assembled in full convocation, they unanimously agreed to make him a present of four or five thousand pounds (equal to thirty at this day) as a recompence for his holy labours. The same being raised by a general contribution among them, three bishops were deputed to wait upon him in the name of the whole body, to tender their warmest acknowledgements for the service he had done the church; and to intreat his acceptance of the testimony she offered of her gratitude. But what was the answer of this great man to these reverend fathers? It would be an injury to give it in any other words than his own. "It "is no small comfort to me," said he, "that "such wise and learned men so well accepted of "my works; but I never will receive any reward "for them, but at the hand of God:" and when the bishops, on finding he would not by any means touch the money, desired leave to present it to his family, "Not so, indeed, my lords;" replied he: "I had rather see it all cast into the

Thames than that I, or any of mine, ſhould have a penny of it; for though your lordſhips offer is very friendly and honourable to me, yet, I ſet ſo much by my pleaſure, and ſo little by my profit, that, in good faith, I would not, for a much larger ſum, have loſt the reſt of ſo many nights, as was ſpent upon theſe writings: and yet I wiſh, upon condition that all hereſies were ſuppreſſed, that all my books were burnt, and my labour entirely loſt." The prelates then ſaw that it was in vain to urge him any farther; ſo with much reluctance they carried the gold back, and reſtored, to their much aſtoniſhed brethren, the ſum which every individual had contributed.

It has been aſſerted by many hiſtorians, that Henry gave the great ſeal to Sir Thomas More, purely with a view of engaging the opinion of a man ſo eminent for piety and learning, in favour of his divorce from queen Catherine; for he thought, after beſtowing on him ſuch a poſt, Sir Thomas could not with decency refuſe it. But if theſe were really the king's ſentiments, he knew very little of the perſon he had to deal with, and in the end found himſelf miſtaken. Sir Thomas always vowed, that he thought the marriage lawful in the ſight of God, ſince it had once received the ſanction of the Apoſtolic council; for, though he ſtood the foremoſt among thoſe who were for aboliſhing the illegal juriſdiction which the popes exerciſed in England, he was far from wiſhing a total rupture with the ſee of Rome, which he plainly perceived was unavoidable, according to the meaſures that king Henry was then purſuing. All theſe things conſidered, Sir Thomas, knowing he muſt be engaged in the conteſt, one way or other, on account of his office, by which means he muſt either offend his conſcience, or diſoblige the king, never ceaſed ſoliciting his great and intimate friend the duke

duke of Norfolk to intercede with his majesty, that he might deliver up the seal, for which, through many infirmities of body, he said he was no longer fit; and being pressed so often by him to this purpose, the duke at length applied to the king, and obtained permission that the chancellor might resign. But when he waited on Henry for that purpose, the monarch, notwithstanding what he called Sir Thomas's obstinacy, with regard to his great affair, expressed much unwillingness to part with so useful a servant; and, giving him many thanks and commendations for his excellent execution of a most important trust, assured him, that, in any request he should have occasion to make, which concerned either his interest or his honour, he should always find the crown ready to assist him.

As Sir Thomas More had sustained the office of lord high chancellor, for above two years and a half, with the utmost wisdom and integrity, so he retired from it with an unparalleled greatness of mind, not being able to defray the necessary expences of his private family, when he had divested himself of that employment. About the time of his resignation, died Sir John More, his father, in a very advanced age, whom he often visited and comforted in his illness, and to whom he expressed the most filial affection in his last moments. This was an event, however, which brought him a very inconsiderable increase of fortune, because the greatest part of his father's estate was settled upon his second wife, who out-lived Sir Thomas many years. When he had delivered up the great seal, he wrote an apology for himself, in which he declared to the publick, that all the revenues and pensions he had by his father, his wife, or his own purchase, except the manors given him by the king, did not amount to the value of fifty pounds a year.

Strange it will appear in this age, that a privy counſellor, who had filled ſo many great offices for above twenty years, and had been all his life a frugal man, ſhould not have been able to purchaſe an hundred pounds per annum. But ſuch was this excellent man's charity, and ſuch his contempt of money, that in all that time he made no proviſion for himſelf, or family.

The day after he quitted the chancellorſhip, which his own family knew nothing of, he went as uſual to Chelſea Church, with his wife and daughter, and after maſs was over (it being cuſtomary for one of his gentlemen to go to his lady, to tell her the chancellor was gone out of church) he went himſelf to the pew-door, and making her a low bow, ſaid, "Madam, my Lord is gone." But ſhe, knowing his humour, took very little notice of this: however, as they were walking home, he told her how matters really ſtood; and ſhe, finding he was in earneſt, and being a worldly-minded woman, cried, in her accuſtomed manner, "Tilly vally, what will you do, Mr. More? Will you ſit and make goſlings in the coals? Would to God I were a man, and you ſhould quickly ſee what I would do! I would not be ſo fooliſh to be ruled, where I might rule." To which Sir Thomas replied, "By my faith, wife, I believe you ſpeak truth, for I never yet found you willing to be ruled;" and then finding fault with her dreſs, he changed the diſcourſe.

The firſt thing he ſet about, after the ſurrender of his office, was to provide places for all his gentlemen and ſervants among the nobility and biſhops, that they might not be ſufferers through him. This being done to his ſatisfaction, he next, being no longer able to bear their expences as he uſed to do, diſpoſed of his married children in their own houſes, leſſening his family by de-

degrees, till he could get it within the bounds of his ſmall income, making, at the utmoſt, but a little above one hundred pounds a year. Nor had he, after his debts were paid, an hundred pounds in gold and ſilver upon earth, his chain and a few rings excepted.

Sir Thomas now reſolved never to engage again in public buſineſs. He gave himſelf up to a domeſtic life, in a retired manner, at his houſe at Chelſea; but as he was well acquainted with the inconſtant and cruel temper of the king, he expected to be treated with rigour, and therefore he prepared himſelf to meet with fortitude whatever evils or ſufferings might befal him.

The Coronation of Anne Boleyn being fixed for the 31ſt of May, 1533, Sir Thomas More was invited to be preſent at the ceremony; but this he declined, as he ſtill retained his opinion as to the illegality of the king's divorce from queen Catherine. This refuſal exaſperated the king ſo much, that in the enſuing parliament a bill was brought into the houſe of lords, attainting him, with ſeveral others, for countenancing and encouraging Elizabeth Barton, a pretended propheteſs, ſtyled, "The Holy Maid of Kent."

This woman affirmed, that ſhe had revelations from God, to give the king warning of his wicked life, and the abuſe of the authority committed to him. In a journey to the Nuns of Sion, ſhe called on Sir Thomas More, and declaring her pretended revelations to him, he was brought in, by the king's direction, as an accomplice with her. He juſtified himſelf, however, as to all the intercourſe he had with her, in ſeveral letters to ſecretary Cromwell; in which he ſaid, he was convinced ſhe was the moſt falſe diſſembling hypocrite that had ever been known. But this availed him nothing, the king being highly incenſed againſt him; and when Sir

Thomas desired to be admitted into the House of Commons, to make his own defence against the bill, his majesty would not consent to it, but assigned a committee of the council to hear him. But the chief point intended was to prevail on him, by fair words or threatenings, to give a publick assent to the king's measure; to which purpose the lord chancellor Audley made a great parade of his majesty's extraordinary love and favour to Sir Thomas. But the worthy knight, not to be shaken, after assuring the committee of the just sense he had of the king's goodness to him, told them, "That he had hoped he should never have heard any more of that business, since he had, from the beginning, informed his majesty of his sentiments with regard to it; and the king accepted them not ungraciously, promising, that he should never be molested farther about it. However, he had found nothing, since the first agitation of the matter, to persuade him to change his mind; if he had, it would have given him a great deal of pleasure." Then the lords proceeded to threaten him, telling him, it was his majesty's commands they should inform him, that he was the most ungrateful and traiterous subject in the world; adding, that he had been the means of his majesty's publishing a book, in which he had put a sword in the pope's hand to fight against himself. This was Henry's famous book against Luther; but Sir Thomas clearing himself of this charge also, and protesting he had always found fault with those parts of the book which were calculated to raise the power of the pope, and that he had objected against them to his majesty, the lords, not being able to make any reply to his vindication, broke up the committee. Mr. Roper, seeing Sir Thomas extremely chearful at his return, asked him if his name was struck out of the bill of attainder, that

he

he was in such good spirits. "I had forgotten "that," said the knight; "but, if you would "know the reason of my mirth, it is, that I have "given the devil so foul a fall to-day; and gone "so far with these lords, that, without great shame "indeed, I can never go back."

As the duke of Norfolk, and secretary Cromwell, had a high esteem for Sir Thomas, they used their utmost efforts to dissuade the king from proceeding on the bill of attainder; assuring him, that they found the upper house were fully determined to hear him in his own defence, before they would pass it; and, if his name were not struck out, it was much to be apprehended, that the bill would be rejected. But the king was too haughty to submit to a subject, with whom he had entered the lists, and too vindictive in his temper to forgive a man who had been his favourite, and yet had dared to offend him. After talking, therefore, in a very high strain, he said, that he would be present himself in the house when the bill should pass; thinking, no doubt, that the parliament stood so much in awe of him, that the lords would not then dare to reject it. The committee of the council, however, differed from him; and finding that nothing else would moderate the obstinacy and vehemence with which he pursued this point, they fell on their knees, and besought him to forbear; telling him, "That if it should be carried against him, in his own presence, as they believed it would be, it would encourage his subjects to despise him, and be a dishonour to him also all over Europe. They did not doubt but they should be able to find out something else against Sir Thomas, wherein they might serve his majesty with some success; but in this affair of the Nun he was universally accounted so innocent, that the world thought him worthier of praise, than of reproof."

With theſe ſuggeſtions, eſpecially that of finding ſomething elſe againſt him, they at laſt ſubdued the king's obſtinacy; and the name of Sir Thomas More was ſtruck out of the bill.

But it being now publicly known, that he was as much out of favour with the king, as he had been in his good graces before, accuſations poured in againſt him from every quarter; and then it was, that he found the peculiar advantage of his innocence and integrity. For, if he had not always acted with the higheſt probity, ſo that, in all the offices which he went through he kept himſelf clear of every ſort of corruption, the moſt trivial matter would have been laid to his charge, in order to cruſh him. Of this we have an inſtance in the caſe of one Parnell, who complained, that he had made a decree againſt him in the Court of Chancery, at the ſuit of Vaughan his adverſary, for which he had received (Vaughan being confined at home with the gout), from the hands of his wife, a great gilt cup, as a bribe. Upon this accuſation, he was brought before the council, by the king's direction; and being charged by the witneſs with the fact, he readily owned, that as that cup was brought to him for a new-year's-gift, long after the decree was made, he had not refuſed to take it.

Sir Thomas Boleyn, now lord Wiltſhire, father to the new queen, who proſecuted the ſuit againſt him, and who hated him for not conſenting to the king's marriage with her, was tranſported with joy to hear him own it, and haſtily cried out, "Lo! my lords, did I not tell you, that you "ſhould find the matter true?" Sir Thomas More then deſired, that as they had with indulgence heard him tell one part of the tale, ſo they would vouchſafe to hear the other: and this being granted, he declared, "That though, after much

ſo-

ſolicitation, he had indeed received the cup, and it was long after the decree was made, yet he had ordered his butler to fill it immediately with wine, of which he directly drank to Mrs. Vaughan; and, when ſhe had pledged him in it, then as freely as her huſband had given it to him, even ſo freely he gave the ſame to her again, to preſent unto her huſband for his new-year's-gift; and which ſhe received, and carried back again, though with ſome reluctance." The truth of this, the woman herſelf, and others then preſent, depoſed before the council, to the great confuſion of the lord Wiltſhire, and to the diſappointment of all his other enemies.

Other accuſations, equally groundleſs, were brought againſt him, which ſerved only the more fully to demonſtrate his innocence and integrity. But in a parliament, which was called in 1534, among many other acts which tended to abrogate the papal power, there was one to declare the king's marriage with Catherine againſt the law of God, confirming the ſentence againſt it, notwithſtanding any diſpenſation to the contrary; and eſtabliſhing the ſucceſſion to the crown of England in the iſſue of his majeſty's preſent marriage with queen Anne. There was a clauſe in this act, that if any perſon ſhould divulge any thing to the ſlander of this marriage, or of the iſſue begotten in it, or, being required to ſwear to maintain the contents of this act, refuſe it, they ſhould be adjudged guilty of miſpriſion of treaſon, and ſuffer accordingly: and, before the two houſes broke up, that they might ſet a good example to the king's other ſubjects, all the members took the oath relating to the ſucceſſion; after which, commiſſioners were ſent all over the kingdom, to adminiſter it to the people of every rank and denomination.

In a ſhort time after the breaking-up of the parliament, there was a committee of the cabinet-council at Lambeth, conſiſting of the archbiſhop, the lord-chancellor Audley, and ſecretary Cromwell; where ſeveral eccleſiaſtics, but no other layman, beſides Sir Thomas More, were cited to appear, and take the oath. Sir Thomas being firſt called, and the oath tendered to him under the great ſeal, he deſired to ſee the act of ſucceſſion which enjoined it; and this being alſo ſhewed him, he ſaid, "That he would blame neither thoſe who had made the act, nor thoſe who had taken the oath; but, for his own part, though he was willing to ſwear to the ſucceſſion in a form of his own drawing, yet the oath which was offered was ſo worded, that his conſcience revolted againſt it, and he could not take it with ſafety to his ſoul." He offered, however, to ſwear to the ſucceſſion of the crown in the iſſue of the king's preſent marriage; becauſe he thought the parliament had a right to determine that matter. Mr. ſecretary Cromwell, who tenderly favoured him, and who knew the conſequence of this debate, when he perceived that Sir Thomas could not be prevailed on to take the oath as it was tendered, ſaw that his ruin would become inevitable; and, in his great anxiety, proteſted with an oath, "That he had rather his only ſon ſhould have loſt his head, than that Sir Thomas More ſhould have refuſed to ſwear to the ſucceſſion:" and the conference ending in this manner, he was committed to the cuſtody of the abbot of Weſtminſter for four days; during which, the king and his council deliberated, what courſe it was beſt to take with him. Several methods were propoſed, but Henry would liſten to none of them; and, in the end, Sir Thomas More was committed priſoner to the Tower, and indicted on the ſtatute.

His

His misfortunes made so little impression upon his spirits, that he retained his usual mirth. The lieutenant of the Tower had been formerly under some obligation to him, and therefore apologized to him, that he could not accommodate him as he wished, without incurring the king's displeasure: to which he replied, "Master lieutenant, whenever I find fault with the entertainment you provide for me, do you turn me out of doors." When Sir Thomas had been confined about a month, his favourite daughter was allowed to visit him, and afterwards his wife. As she had not the magnanimity, and probably not so good a heart as her husband, she remonstrated with much petulance, "That he, who had been always reputed so wise a man, should now so play the fool, as to be content to be shut up in a close filthy prison with rats and mice, when he might enjoy his liberty and the king's favour, if he would but do as all the bishops and other learned men had done: and as he had a good house to live in, his library, his gallery, his garden, and all other necessaries handsome about him, where he might enjoy himself with his wife and children, she could not conceive what he meant by tarrying so quietly in this imprisonment." He heard her very patiently, and then asked her in his facetious manner, "Whether that house was not as nigh to heaven as his own?" which she resenting, he added very seriously, "That he saw no great cause for so much joy in his house, and the things about it, which would so soon forget its master, that, if he were under ground but seven years, and came to it again, he should find those in it who would bid him begone, and tell him it was none of his. Besides, his stay in it was so uncertain, that as he would be but a bad merchant, who would put himself in danger to lose eternity, for a thousand

years;

years; so how much more, if he were not sure to enjoy it one day to an end?"

Sir Thomas had now been a prisoner in the Tower above a year, and the king had tried every expedient to procure his approbation of his divorce, and second marriage, that he might avail himself of the example of a man so famous for his wisdom, learning, and religion, but in vain. The knight had espoused the cause of queen Catherine, upon a principle of conscience, and therefore he always withstood Henry upon that point with a firmness becoming his character. The affair of the king's supremacy was no less a matter of conscience to him than the other; but, as the statute which enacted it had made it treason to write or speak against it, he observed a silence in this respect, conformable to the law; but he refused to acknowledge it with an oath: wherefore the king, being determined to get rid of a man who had given him so much trouble, and of whose virtues and popularity he stood in awe, gave orders that Sir Thomas More should be brought to his trial.

In consequence of this, on a day appointed, he was conveyed in a boat from the Tower to Westminster-hall. So long an imprisonment had much impaired his strength: he went, therefore, leaning on his staff from the waterside; but though his countenance carried the marks of weakness and infirmity, it had the same air of chearfulness, which always sat upon it in the days of his prosperity. He was tried by the lord chancellor, and a committee of the lords, with some of the judges, at the bar of the King's-Bench. When the attorney-general had gone through the charge against him in the indictment, in the most virulent manner, the lord chancellor said to him, in which he was seconded by the duke of Norfolk,

"You

"You see now, how grievously you have offended his majesty; nevertheless, he is so merciful, that, if you will but leave your obstinacy, and change your opinion, we hope you may yet obtain pardon of his highness for what is past." To this he replied with great resolution, "That he had much cause to thank these noble lords for this courtesy; but he besought Almighty God, that, through his grace, he might continue in the mind, he was then in, unto death." After this, he went through his defence upon every part of the indictment with great strength of argument, powerful eloquence, and an astonishing presence of mind.

The principal evidence against him was Mr. Rich, the solicitor-general, who being called and sworn, deposed, that when he was sent, some time before, to fetch Sir Thomas More's books and papers from the Tower, at the end of a conversation with him, upon the king's supremacy, on Mr. Rich's owning, on a case put by him, that no parliament could make a law that God should not be God, Sir Thomas replied, "No more can the parliament make the king supreme head of the church." When the solicitor-general had given this evidence to the court on oath, the prisoner, under a great surprise at the malice and falshood of it, said, "If I were a man, my lords, that did not regard an oath, I needed not, at this time, and in this place, as it is well known to you all, stand as an accused person; and, if this oath, Mr. Rich, which you have taken, be true, then I pray, that I may never see God in the face; which I would not say, were it otherwise, to gain the whole world." Upon which, the solicitor not being able to prove his testimony by witnesses, though he attempted it, that allegation dropped.

But,

But, unhappily for Sir Thomas, he lived in the days of Henry VIII. whose will was a law to judges, as well as juries: notwithstanding, therefore, the evidence against him proved notoriously false; yet the jury, to their eternal reproach, found him guilty. They had no sooner brought in their verdict, than the lord-chancellor Audley, as the mouth of the court, began immediately to pronounce the sentence; but the prisoner stopped him short with this modest rebuke: "My lord, when I was towards the law, the manner in such cases was, to ask the prisoner, before sentence, whether he could give any reason why judgment should not proceed against him?" Upon this, the chancellor had the grace to stay, and asked Sir Thomas what he was able to allege. But if a jury could not be moved by what he had said in defending himself against the charge in this indictment, there could be little hope, that judges would be influenced to wave their sentence by what he should say against the matter of the indictment itself. However, whether the exceptions he made were too strong to be answered; or whether the chancellor began at this time to feel some little compunction, or had reason to be afraid of the popular clamour, if he took the condemnation of the prisoner entirely upon himself; after Sir Thomas had done speaking, he turned to the lord-chief-justice, and asked him his opinion openly before the court, as to the validity of the indictment, notwithstanding the exceptions of the prisoner. The answer of the chief justice, whose name was Fitz-James, is somewhat remarkable: "My lords all, by St. Gillian, I must needs confess, that if the act of parliament be not unlawful, then in my conscience the indictment is not insufficient." Upon this equivocal expression, the lord-chancellor said to the rest, "Lo, my lords; lo, you hear what

what my lord-chief-juſtice ſaith;" and, without waiting for any reply, proceeded to paſs ſentence, "That Sir Thomas More ſhould be carried back to the Tower of London, and from thence be drawn on a hurdle through the city to Tyburn, there to be hanged till he was half dead; after that, cut down, yet alive, his private parts cut off, his belly ripped, his bowels burnt, his four quarters ſet up over the four gates of the city, and his head upon London-bridge."

This ſhocking ſentence filled the eyes of many with tears, and their hearts with horror. Then the court telling Sir Thomas, that, if he had any thing farther to ſay, they were ready to hear him, he ſtood up, and addreſſed himſelf to the court, in a manner that ſhews him to have been a primitive Chriſtian and true philoſopher, however he might be blinded in other reſpects by Romiſh ſuperſtition. "I have nothing," ſaid he, "farther to ſay, my lords, but that like as the bleſſed apoſtle St. Paul was preſent, and conſented to the death of Stephen, and kept their cloaths who ſtoned him to death, and yet be they now both twain holy ſaints in heaven, and ſhall continue there friends for ever; ſo I verily truſt, and ſhall therefore right heartily pray, that though your lordſhips have now been judges on earth to my condemnation, we may yet hereafter all meet together in heaven, to our everlaſting ſalvation: and ſo I pray God preſerve you all, and eſpecially my ſovereign lord the king, and ſend him faithful counſellors."

Having taken his leave of the court in this noble manner, he was conducted from the bar to the Tower, with the axe carried before him in the uſual manner after condemnation. But, when he came to the Tower-wharf, his favourite daughter, Mrs. Margaret Roper, thinking this would be the laſt opportunity ſhe ſhould ever have, was waiting there

there to see him. As soon as he appeared, she burst through the throng and guard, which surrounded him, and having received his blessing upon her knees, she embraced him eagerly before them all, amidst a flood of tears, and a thousand kisses of tenderness and affection. Her heart being ready to break with grief, the only words that she could utter, were, "My father, oh my father!" If any thing could have shaken his fortitude, it must have beeen this: but he only took her up in his arms, and told her, "That whatsoever he should "suffer, tho' he was innocent, yet it was not "without the will of God, to whose blessed plea-"sure she should conform her own will; that she "knew well enough all the secrets of his heart, "and that she must be patient for her loss." Upon this she parted from him; but scarcely was she turned aside, before her passions of grief and love became irresistible, and she again suddenly broke through the crowd, ran eagerly upon him the second time, took him round the neck, and hung upon him with her embraces, ready to die with sorrow. This was rather too much for man to bear; and though he did not speak a word, yet the tears flowed down his cheeks in great abundance, till she took her last embrace, and left him.

After he had lain a few days under sentence of death, preparing his mind, by prayer and meditation, for the stroke which was to follow; one of the creatures of the king made him a visit, with an intent to persuade him, if possible, to comply with his majesty's will, and to change his mind. Sir Thomas, wearied at last with his nonsense and importunity, in order to get rid of him, told him, "That he had changed it;" which words were no sooner out of his mouth, than the courtier, pluming himself upon the merit he should have in bringing Sir Thomas More to the point which his majesty

majesty wished, and so many others had tried in vain, went in great haste and joy to inform the king. Henry, however, was not without apprehensions of a mistake: he ordered the messenger of the news, therefore, to return immediately to the Tower, to know in what particulars the prisoner had changed his mind: when he had the mortification not only to be rebuked for his impertinent officiousness, in telling his majesty every word Sir Thomas had said, even in jest; but also to learn that he had changed his mind no otherwise than this, "That whereas he intended to be shaved, that he might appear to the people as he was wont to do before his imprisonment, he was now fully resolved that his beard should share the same fate with his head." In consideration that he had borne the highest office in the kingdom, his sentence of being drawn, hanged, and quartered, was, by the king's favour, changed into beheading; and when he was informed of it, he said, with his usual mirth, "God forbid the king should use any more such mercy to any of my friends! and God preserve my posterity from such favours!"

On the 5th of July, 1535, Sir Thomas Pope, his intimate friend, came to him from the king, very early in the morning, to acquaint him that he was to be executed that day at nine o'clock, and therefore that he must immediately prepare himself for death. However, if his majesty intended to shock or affright him by this short warning, he lost his aim so entirely, that the prisoner said to Sir Thomas Pope, "I most heartily thank you for your good tidings; I have been much bound to the king's highness for the benefit of his honours that he hath most bountifully bestowed upon me, yet I am more bound to his grace, I do assure you, for putting me here, where I have had convenient

time

time and ſpace to have remembrance of my end; and (ſo help me God!) moſt of all I am bound unto him, that it hath pleaſed his majeſty ſo ſhortly to rid me out of the miſeries of this wretched world." His friend then told him, that his majeſty's pleaſure farther was, that he ſhould not uſe many words at his execution: to which Sir Thomas anſwered, "You do well, Mr. Pope, to give me warning of the king's pleaſure herein, for otherwiſe I had propoſed, at that time, to have ſpoken ſomewhat, but no matter wherewith his grace, or any others, ſhould have cauſe to be offended: howbeit, whatſoever I intended, I am ready to conform myſelf obediently to his highneſs's command; and I beſeech you, good Mr. Pope, to be a means to his majeſty, that my daughter Margaret may be at my burial." Being told that the king had already conſented that his wife, and children, and any of his friends, might have the liberty to be preſent at it, he added, "O how much beholden then am I to his grace, that unto my poor burial vouchſafes to have ſuch gracious conſideration!" Sir Thomas Pope having thus diſcharged his commiſſion bad his friend adieu, with many tears, and with much commiſeration; but the priſoner deſired him to be comforted with the proſpect of eternal bliſs, in which they ſhould live and love together; and to give him an impreſſion of the eaſe and quiet of his own mind, he took his urinal in his hand, and caſting his water, ſaid with his uſual mirth, "I ſee no danger but that this man might live longer, if it had pleaſed the king."

As ſoon as Sir Thomas Pope had left him, he dreſſed himſelf in the beſt cloaths he had, that his appearance might expreſs the eaſe and complacency which he felt within. The lieutenant of the Tower objecting to this generoſity to his executioner, who was

was to have his cloaths, Sir Thomas assured him, "if it was cloth of gold, he should think it well bestowed on him who was to do him so singular a benefit." But the lieutenant, who was his friend, pressed him very much to change his dress; and Sir Thomas, being very unwilling to deny him so small a gratification, put on a gown of frize; and, of the little money that he had left, sent an angel to the executioner, as a token of his good will.

And now the fatal hour being come, about nine o'clock he was brought out of the Tower, carrying a red cross in his hand, and often lifting up his eyes to heaven. A woman meeting him with a cup of wine, he refused it, saying, "Christ at his passion drank no wine, but gall and vinegar." Another woman came crying, and demanded some papers she said she had left in his hands when he was lord chancellor; to whom he said, "Good woman, have patience but for an hour, and the king will rid me of the care I have for those papers, and every thing else." Another woman followed him, crying, he had done her much wrong when he was lord chancellor; to whom he said, "I very well remember the cause, and if I were to decide it now, I should make the same decree." When he came to the scaffold, it seemed ready to fall; whereupon he said, merrily, to the lieutenant, "Pray, Sir, see me safe up; and as to my coming down, let me shift for myself." He then desired the people to pray for him, to bear witness that he died in the faith of the catholic church, a faithful servant to God and the king. He repeated the *miserere* psalm kneeling, with much devotion; and the executioner asking him forgiveness, he kissed him, and said, "Pluck up thy spirits, man, and be not afraid to do thine office; my neck is very short, take heed therefore thou strike not awry, for saving thine honesty." Laying

ing

ing his head upon the block, he bad the executioner ſtay till he had put his beard aſide, for that had committed no treaſon. At one blow of the axe his head was then ſevered from his body.

Such was the tragical end of Sir Thomas More, whoſe great accompliſhments rendered him an ornament to his country, and who for his integrity, his fortitude, his incorruptible ſpirit, and generous contempt of riches and external honours, was equal to the moſt celebrated characters of ancient Greece or Rome.

His perſon was of the middle ſtature, and well proportioned, his complexion fair, and his countenance chearful, expreſſing the temper of his mind.

His *Utopia* is his moſt celebrated work; but he alſo wrote the hiſtory of king Richard the Third, which has been publiſhed both in Latin and Engliſh. He wrote many other pieces; but they are now little known, being chiefly in defence of the Roman catholic religion.

*** *Authorities.* Life of Sir Thomas More, by Mr. Roper, in the Muſeum, Harleian MSS. No. 7030. Hoddeſdon's life of More. Dr. Warner's *ditto.* Biog. Britan. Britiſh Biography vol. II. Jortin's life of Eraſmus.

The

The LIFE of

JOHN FISHER,

BISHOP of ROCHESTER.

[A.D. 1459, to 1535.]

THE memoirs of this illuſtrious prelate are ſo cloſely connected with thoſe of Sir Thomas More, that the omiſſion of ſome account of a fellow-ſufferer in the ſame cauſe would not only create a chaſm in the hiſtorical events of the reign of Henry VIII. but might miſlead the reader into an opinion, that Sir Thomas was the ſole victim to the king's diſappointment and rage on the conteſted points of his divorce and ſupremacy.

JOHN FISHER was the ſon of a merchant of Beverly, in Yorkſhire, where he was born in the year 1459; and his father dying while he was very young, the care of his education devolved to his mother, who being informed of the diſpoſition he diſcovered for learning, while under the tuition of a prieſt of the collegiate church of Beverly, reſolved to bring him up to the church, and with this view ſent him to the univerſity of Cambridge in 1484. In 1491, he was admitted maſter of arts; and in 1495 was appointed one of the proctors of the univerſity, and elected maſter of Michael-houſe,

the college in which he had been educated. In 1501, he went through his public exercises for the degree of doctor in divinity with such uncommon credit, that his reputation was thereby considerably increased, and he was honoured with the office of vice-chancellor of the university.

At this time, prince Arthur, the eldest son of Henry VII. was living; and prince Henry (afterwards Henry VIII.), being designed for an ecclesiastic, was put under the tuition of Dr. Fisher, who by this favourable opportunity was introduced to Margaret, the famous Countess of Richmond, and mother of Henry VII. a lady eminent for her piety, her exemplary virtues, and her literary talents. The countess soon discerned the great merit of Dr. Fisher, and in consequence appointed him to be her chaplain and confessor, in which station he so entirely gained her esteem, that in all her worldly as well as spiritual concerns she acted under his advice and direction. The university of Cambridge soon reaped the benefit of her confidence in him; for in 1502, by Fisher's recommendation, the countess founded two perpetual divinity lectures, one at Oxford, and the other at Cambridge. Of the latter Dr. Fisher was appointed the first divinity professor. In 1504, he was promoted to the see of Rochester; and it is greatly to his honour, that, though it was the least valuable of any of the bishoprics at that time, he never would change it for a better.

On the 29th of June, 1509, death deprived the good prelate of his and the public's royal benefactress, whose numerous acts of liberality, all calculated to serve the cause of piety and literature, have transmitted her memory to the present generation. Amongst many others, her foundations of Christ's and St. John's colleges in Cambridge are lasting monuments of her well directed munificence.

ficence. She lived to see the first perfected in 1508, and the latter was completed under the pious care of the bishop of Rochester in 1516. This illustrious lady, who by her birth, and her marriage with the earl of Richmond, was related to thirty kings and queens within the fourth degree of blood or affinity, often declared, that "on condition the princes of Christendom would combine themselves, and march against their common enemy the Turks, she would most willingly attend them, and be their laundress in the camp."

The bishop of Rochester, in 1512, was nominated to attend the lateran council at Rome, as it appears by the archives of St. John's College; but it is most probable, that the inspection of the two seminaries of learning founded by the countess of Richmond prevented the journey, even after he had obtained letters of recommendation to the most eminent men in Italy; though some have assigned this event to a disgust taken by cardinal Wolsey to our pious prelate, who at this time openly exclaimed against the cardinal's pomp and haughtiness, at a synod of bishops. Fisher, however, continued in favour with the king till 1527, which it is not likely he would have done, if Wolsey had marked him out as a dangerous enemy.

In that year the king questioned Fisher concerning the validity of his marriage with queen Catherine; and the bishop, with his usual freedom and integrity, declared it to be legal in the sight of God and man, from which opinion he never would depart: and such was the fame of his learning and probity in foreign countries, that Henry found himself more embarrassed by the deference paid to the bishop's decision, than even by the procrastinations of the court of Rome. He, therefore, now began to withdraw his favour from

his old preceptor, and moſt probably to meditate his deſtruction.

On the firſt occaſion that offered, the courtiers, as uſual, began the quarrel for their maſter. In the parliament, which met November 3, 1529, a motion was made in the houſe of lords, for ſuppreſſing the leſſer monaſteries, which the biſhop oppoſed with much warmth, when the duke of Norfolk very tartly reproved him, ſaying, "My lord of Rocheſter, many of theſe words might have been well ſpared: but it is often ſeen, that the greateſt clerks are not always the wiſeſt men." To which Fiſher replied, "My lord, I do not remember any fools in my time, that have proved great clerks."

But another circumſtance created the biſhop many enemies, which was his violent zeal againſt Luther and his followers; for, not content with preaching againſt this reformer, he wrote a vindication of king Henry's book, entitled, *An aſſertion of the ſeven ſacraments againſt Martin Luther*; which had been fairly refuted by Luther; but for which the pope had given the king the title of "Defender of the Faith;" "A title," ſays Mr. Horace Walpole, "which, by a ſingular felicity in the wording of it, ſuited Henry equally well, when he burned Papiſts or Proteſtants,—it ſuited each of his daughters Mary and Elizabeth,—it fitted the martyr Charles, and the profligate Charles,—the Romiſh James, and the Calviniſt William,—and at laſt ſeemed peculiarly adapted to the weak head of high-church Anne."

The biſhop likewiſe, in conjunction with Sir Thomas More, ſeized all the books of Lutheraniſm, as well as thoſe containing any of the doctrines of the Wickliffites or Lollards, and puniſhed thoſe in his dioceſe who followed the errors,

errors, as he called them, of thoſe arch-heretics Wickliff and Luther.

In 1530, he was twice in very imminent hazard of his life. One Richard Rouſe came into the kitchen, and, while the biſhop's cook went out to fetch him ſome drink, took that opportunity to put poiſon into the gruel, which was preparing for the family dinner. Fortunately for the biſhop, he was indiſpoſed and did not eat of the meſs; but of ſeventeen perſons who partook of it, two died, and the reſt were never reſtored to perfect health. Upon this occaſion, an act of parliament was made, which declared poiſoning to be high treaſon, and adjudged the offender to be boiled to death. And that ſevere puniſhment was accordingly inflicted upon Rouſe in Smithfield; but the act was afterwards repealed. The other danger which the biſhop eſcaped proceeded from a cannon bullet, which, being ſhot from the other ſide of the Thames, pierced through his houſe at Lambeth Marſh, and came very near his ſtudy, where he uſed to ſpend the greater part of his time. Upon which, apprehending there was a deſign againſt his life, he retired to Rocheſter.

In the year 1531, when the queſtion of giving the king the title of Supreme Head of the Church was agitated in the convocation, the biſhop oppoſed it in the ſtrongeſt terms; and, when he found it likely to paſs, he moved for an amendment, by adding theſe words, "In ſo far as is lawful by the law of Chriſt;" and theſe words being accordingly annexed by the votes of a majority, Henry was highly exaſperated againſt Fiſher, and from this time, his agents ſought all opportunities to ruin him. The biſhop too ſoon gave them an opportunity; for he was one of the many deluded perſons who gave credit to the pretended trances and holy inſpirations of the

Maid of Kent. Amongſt other things, ſhe propheſied, that if the king perſiſted in the divorce, and married another wife, he would not long ſurvive it. The biſhop, who warmly eſpouſed the cauſe of queen Catherine, conſented to an intercourſe with her: upon which ſecretary Cromwell, who was his friend, appriſed him of his danger, adviſed him to deſiſt from his imprudent encouragement of this impoſture, and to write to the king acknowledging his fault, and imploring his pardon; but, inſtead of this, the biſhop avowed his belief of the piety and integrity of the Maid of Kent. Cromwell renewed his remonſtances againſt his conduct in a ſecond letter; and told him, that, if he was brought to trial, he would certainly be found guilty of miſpriſion of treaſon. The biſhop was accordingly afterwards tried, and with five others found guilty of having concealed from the king the ſpeeches Elizabeth Barton had made relative to his majeſty. He was condemned to forfeit his goods and chattels to the king, and to be impriſoned during his pleaſure; but he was releaſed, on paying a fine of 300*l.* As for the Maid of Kent, ſhe and the monks her accomplices were executed at Tyburn, where ſhe confeſſed her impoſtures, and a carnal intimacy with the monks, who, ſhe ſaid, had impoſed upon her ignorance.

During the ſame ſeſſion of parliament, in which thoſe who had countenanced this woman were attainted, the act was paſſed annulling the king's marriage with Catherine, and confirming his marriage with Anne Boleyn; and an oath was taken, by both houſes, of allegiance to the heirs of the king's body by his moſt dear and entirely beloved lawful wife queen Anne begotten, and to be begotten, *&c.* Inſtead of taking this oath, the biſhop withdrew to his houſe at Rocheſter, where

in

in about four days he received orders from the archbiſhop of Canterbury to attend him and the other commiſſioners, who were authoriſed to adminiſter the oath at Lambeth. He appeared to the ſummons, but, after conſidering the oath five days, abſolutely refuſed to take it, and was thereupon committed to the Tower on the 26th of April, 1534.

The general concern expreſſed by perſons of the firſt rank in the kingdom, for the impriſonment of this worthy prelate, induced the principal members of the king's council to viſit him in the Tower, and to uſe their utmoſt endeavours to reconcile him to the oath, but in vain. All that they could obtain from him was, that he would ſwear allegiance to the king, and to the ſucceſſion, but not to the illegality of the marriage with queen Catherine. In this reſolution, Fiſher, and his illuſtrious fellow-priſoner Sir Thomas More, remained inflexible; at the ſame time keeping up a friendly correſpondence by letters, animating each other to perſevere in obeying what they adjudged to be the law of God, in preference to the king's will and pleaſure. Archbiſhop Cranmer was the only man in the council who declared it as his opinion, that it would be prudent to accept their conceſſions with reſpect to the ſucceſſion, without troubling them on the other points; for ſo great an opinion had the archbiſhop of their influence, that, in his letter to Cromwell upon this occaſion, he writes, "if they once ſwear to the ſucceſſion, it will quiet the kingdom, for they acknowledging it, all other perſons will acquieſce and ſubmit to their judgments." But the king, who made it a rule to ſhew no mercy to thoſe who oppoſed his arbitrary will, as ſoon as the parliament met in November 1534, took care to have him attainted for refuſing the oath required by the act of ſuc-

ceſſion, and his biſhoprick was declared void from the 2d of January, 1535. During his confinement, he was treated very unkindly by the king's expreſs orders, being hardly allowed the neceſſaries of life. It is highly probable, the tyrant expected, that ill uſage, combining with old age, would have taken him off in the courſe of a year's impriſonment, and have ſpared him the ſhame of putting to death his venerable tutor. But the vigour of his conſtitution ſurmounting all hardſhips, the royal barbarian was obliged to have recourſe to the meaneſt of all ſtratagems to accompliſh his deſtruction, which he had vowed from the inſtant he received the news that pope Paul III. in conſideration of his eminent piety, his learning, his liberality to the univerſity of Cambridge, and his faithful attachment to his religion, had created him a cardinal, by the title of Cardinal Prieſt of St. Vitalis. This event happened in May; and Henry was ſo exaſperated, that he ſtrictly prohibited bringing the hat into his dominions, which was thereupon ſtopt at Calais; at the ſame time, Cromwell was ſent to the Tower, to ſound the biſhop upon this ſubject, and to diſcover if he had ſolicited this new honour. Fiſher, who was totally ignorant of what had paſſed, upon having this queſtion put by Cromwell, "My lord of Rocheſter, what would you ſay, if the pope ſhould ſend you a cardinal's hat; would you accept it?" immediately made the following modeſt and artleſs reply, "Sir, I know myſelf to be ſo far unworthy of any ſuch dignity, that I think of nothing leſs; but if any ſuch thing ſhould happen, aſſure yourſelf I ſhould improve that favour to the beſt advantage that I could, in aſſiſting the holy catholic church of Chriſt, and in that reſpect I would receive it upon my knees." When this anſwer was reported to Henry, he exclaimed

claimed with great vehemence, "Yea, is he so lusty? Well, let the pope send him a hat when he will, mother of God! he shall wear it on his shoulders then, for I will leave him never a head to set it on." The snare was now laid to destroy the unfortunate bishop: the solicitor Rich was sent to the Tower from the king, to draw him into discourse upon the subject of the supremacy. He accordingly represented to Fisher, that the king, for the better satisfaction of his own conscience, had sent him privately to know his opinion concerning it; assuring him, at the same time, in the name of his royal master, that no peril or trouble should ensue from declaring his free sentiments. On this assurance, the bishop declared to Rich, that the title was unlawful, and that the king could not take it, without endangering his soul. In consequence of this declaration, he was brought to trial; and it was produced in evidence against him by Rich, that he had denied that the king was supreme head, on earth, of the church of England: this was affirmed to be high treason. It was in vain, that the bishop related the confidential manner in which Rich came to him; and that he pleaded his right to give his advice when commanded in the name of the king; very justly observing, that the statute mentioned *maliciously* denying, which could by no means be construed to affect him. All his arguments were lost upon a court and jury, acting under the influence of a merciless tyrant. Sentence of death was passed upon him on the 17th of June, in the usual form; but, by warrant from the king, it was changed to decapitation.

After his condemnation, his behaviour was consistent with the great character that he had always maintained. It was pious, resolute, and chearful, neither repining at the manifest injustice of his

ſentence, nor courting applauſe by exulting at the approach of the crown of martyrdom. On the 22d of June, the lieutenant of the Tower informed him, at five in the morning, that he was to ſuffer that day; and it is remarkable, that, after thanking the officer for his intelligence, he ſlept very ſound for two hours: after which he roſe with unuſual neatneſs, obſerving to his ſervant, that it was his marriage day, and calmly reſigned himſelf to his hard fate. He was ſo extremely weak, that the warders of the Tower were obliged to carry him in a chair to the ſcaffold on Tower-hill, were he was beheaded, and the next day his head was fixed upon London-bridge.

Thus fell, in the 77th year of his age, this moſt eminent prelate; whoſe tragical death left a foul blot on the judicial proceedings of this kingdom. He his repreſented to us, with reſpect to his perſon, as a very tall, comely, robuſt man, but greatly emaciated in the decline of life. His character has been already given; but the teſtimony of Eraſmus is too conſiderable to be omitted; he ſays of him, that "he was a man of the higheſt integrity, of profound learning, incredible ſweetneſs of temper, and uncommon greatneſs of ſoul."

He was the author of ſeveral theological and controverſial tracts in Latin and Engliſh, of no repute in the preſent times; but his opinion of the king's marriage, in a letter to T. Wolſey, printed in the collection of records at the end of the ſecond volume of Collier's Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory, merits the notice of the curious.

*** *Authorities.* Biog. Britan. Bailey's life of Fiſher. Walpole's catalogue of royal and noble Authors. Burnet's hiſtory of the Reformation, *&c.*

THE

THE LIFE of

THOMAS CROMWELL,

EARL of ESSEX.

[A. D. 1498, to 1540.]

THE Perſians have a fable written by one of their moſt celebrated poets, in which the pine tree, and the cotton ſhrub, are brought together, diſputing the pre-eminence. The tree claims it on account of its height and upright poſition, and reflects on the cotton ſhrub, as contemptible, on account of its diminutiveneſs. But the ſhrub gets the better in the argument, in conſideration of its valuable produce; thereby conveying this moral: "That men are not to be eſteemed according to their birth, or appearance, but according to the excellence of their qualities; and as, in the former of theſe lights, the memorable perſon we are about to treat of will be held among the meaneſt; ſo, in the latter, where actions alone are conſidered, he will undoubtedly be rated among the moſt exalted of our Engliſh worthies.

Thomas Cromwell was the ſon of a blackſmith, and born at Putney, in the county of Surrey, about the year 1498; in which place he received all the education he ever had, being taught to read and write at the pariſh ſchool; where he acquired Latin enough to underſtand his Creed and Paternoſter. It appears, however, that, in his latter days, his father turned brewer; and that, upon

his mother's being left a widow, she married a second husband, who was a sheerman in London; but this person's name is no where recorded, neither is there any certainty as to the Christian name of Cromwell's own father.

It cannot be supposed, that the son of such parents could have a very considerable inheritance; and, indeed, it is morally certain that Cromwell derived nothing from his, besides a robust and healthful constitution. However, as he grew up, finding in himself a great propensity to travelling, he went into foreign countries; and, if we may credit Mr. Lloyd, author of the British Worthies, was retained as a clerk or secretary to the English factory at Antwerp. But that office being too great a confinement, he ardently wished for an opportunity to get rid of it; and, in 1510, one offered, which suited with the bent of his inclinations.

There had been, for many years, a famous guild of our lady, in the church of St. Botolph, at Boston in Lincolnshire, to which several popes had granted very considerable indulgences; and, in those days of ignorance and superstition, such things were so highly valued by the people in general, that the sisters and brethren of the guild were very anxious to have them renewed by Julius II. who then presided in St. Peter's chair; for which purpose they dispatched two messengers to Rome, with a large sum of money, to be distributed, by them, as they should find their interest required. These taking Antwerp in their route, there became acquainted with Mr. Cromwell; and, perceiving he was much better qualified to obtain what they desired from the court of Rome than they were themselves, they prevailed on him to accompany them thither. The consequence of this union was very favourable. Cromwell coming with them to Rome, immediately set about enquiring into

into the character of the reigning pontiff; and finding that he was a very great epicure, he determed to avail himself of that foible, in order to procure the grant which his companions sought for. Accordingly, having caused some very curious jellies to be made, after the English fashion, then unknown in Italy, he presented them to the pope; and these delicacies so highly pleased the holy father, that, without hesitation, he granted to the English commissaries the indulgences which they required.

After this transaction, the account of Cromwell's conduct in Italy is very imperfect. We only know, that, during his stay in that country, he served under the famous duke of Bourbon, being present at the sacking of Rome; and that he assisted John Russel, esq. afterwards Sir John, and earl of Bedford, in making his escape from Bologna, when he was in danger of being betrayed into the hands of the French, while he was transacting a secret commission for his master, king Henry VIII. and by his good office he acquired a friend who was of great service to him on his return to England. It is said, that Cromwell, in his journey to and from Rome, gave a wonderful instance of his extraordinary application and memory, by learning a new translation of the Testament, just then published, under the direction of Erasmus, by heart. But there is an instance of his gratitude, which, though it happened some years after, we must not omit to mention in this place, as it will throw a great light upon his circumstances, while he travelled, or rather wandered up and down, upon the continent.

After the defeat of the French army at Castiglioni in Italy, Cromwell was reduced to the utmost poverty and distress, being destitute of the common necessaries of life; in which deplorable

condition he arrived at the city of Florence. Here one Freſcobald, a very rich and eminent merchant, meeting Cromwell one day by chance, and obſerving he was a foreigner in diſtreſs, enquired into his circumſtances. On finding that he was an ingenious and deſerving man, he was ſo wrought upon by compaſſion for the ſufferings of his fellow creature, and generous regard for merit, that he not only equipped Cromwell with cloaths, but made him a preſent of a horſe, and ſixteen ducats in gold, to defray his expences into his own country. Freſcobald, being afterwards reduced to poverty, came over to England (where he had conſiderable dealings), in order to recover the ſum of one thouſand five hundred ducats, which were due to him from ſeveral perſons. Cromwell, who was then become a lord, finding him out, aſſiſted him in the recovery of his due, and not only repaid him the ſixteen ducats above-mentioned, but gave him ſixteen hundred more, to make up his former loſſes.

Thus, we ſee, by whatever means our adventurer contrived to get abroad, he was but very little the better for it, with regard to his immediate circumſtances; yet may it be truly ſaid, that Cromwell, in his travels, laid the foundation of that fortune which he ſubſequently enjoyed. For being a man of great diligence, and having a natural inclination for ſtate affairs, he took care to inform himſelf of the ſeveral laws, cuſtoms, and governments, of the nations he had viſited; and acquired ſo perfect a knowledge of the German, French, and Italian languages, that, when he came back into England, he could ſpeak them fluently, and write them with correctneſs. Theſe valuable accompliſhments ſoon recommended him to the notice of cardinal Wolſey; and we find Cromwell was in that miniſter's ſervice in 1522; who, on

account of his great abilities, and equal induſtry, made him his ſolicitor, and frequently employed him in affairs of the utmoſt delicacy and importance. Cromwell was the cardinal's principal inſtrument in founding the two colleges at Oxford and Ipſwich; as he was, alſo, in ſuppreſſing the ſmall monaſteries which Henry VIII. allotted for the completing and endowing thoſe ſeminaries.

But nothing does ſo great an honour to the memory of Cromwell, as his fidelity and gratitude to his maſter Wolſey, when that miniſter fell into diſgrace, to whom he never failed in the ſmalleſt circumſtance of affection and reſpect, but got into parliament (in thoſe days a thing not very difficult) purpoſely to defend his cauſe againſt his enemies; and he did it with ſo much ſtrength of reaſon and eloquence, that no treaſon could be laid to the cardinal's charge. By this means, indeed, Cromwell derived great advantages to himſelf; for Henry, ever on the watch for able people to ſerve him, without conſidering what they might be in other particulars, took notice of a ſervant, who could ſo boldly and ſucceſsfully aſſert the cauſe of his degraded maſter, and, upon the diſſolution of the cardinal's houſhold, took Cromwell into his own ſervice, though not without the additional recommendation of Sir Chriſtopher Hales, maſter of the rolls, and Sir John Ruſſel, already mentioned, who had repreſented him as the fitteſt perſon to manage the diſputes which then ſubſiſted between the king of England and the pope; and being thus introduced at court, he ſoon acquired a conſiderable ſhare of the king's favour and confidence.

Cromwell, in his religious ſentiments, was known to be a favourer of the Reformation; and having already been acceſſary to the demolition of ſome religious houſes, his enemies, and the clergy in particular, loudly exclaimed againſt his promotion;

promotion; but, instead of endeavouring to win them over, he soon widened the breach, by making the king acquainted with an important secret respecting them, which he had discovered while he was at Rome. The new favourite told his majesty, that his authority was abused within his own realm by the pope and his clergy, who, being sworn to him, were afterwards dispensed from their oath, and sworn a-new to the bishop of Rome; so that he was but half their king, and they but half his subjects; which, as Cromwell justly observed, was derogatory to his crown, and altogether prejudicial to the common laws of his kingdom; declaring withal, that his majesty might accumulate to himself great riches, nay, as much as all the clergy in England were worth, if he pleased to take the occasion which now offered. This was a proposal the king readily listened to; and, approving entirely of his advice, he asked Cromwell if he could confirm what he said; who answered, he could, to a certainty; and thereupon shewed his majesty the oath which the prelates took to the head of the church at their consecration; wherein they swore to help, retain, and defend, against all men, the popedom of Rome, the rules of the holy fathers, the regalities of St. Peter, &c.

It is easy to conceive how agreeable such a discovery, which promised a new source of wealth, must have been to Henry. Accordingly, in the transport of his joy, he embraced Cromwell, and, that no time might be lost, the convocation being then sitting, he took the royal signet from his finger, and sent Cromwell with it, to acquaint the clergy that they had all fallen into a premunire. The new minister, thus deputed from the king, placed himself among the bishops, and silence being commanded, after enlarging upon the extent of the regal authority, and the obedience due to that, and

the

the laws of the kingdom, he told them, that the clergy had violated both, by acknowledging the legantine power of Wolsey in England, and by their oaths to the pope, which were contrary to the allegiance they had sworn to their sovereign, whereby they had forfeited to the crown all their goods, chattels, lands, possessions, and livings. The bishops, hearing this, were not a little frightened and astonished, and at first attempted to excuse themselves, and deny the fact: but, after Cromwell had shewn them the very copy of the oath they took to the pope at their consecration, the matter was so plain, they could say no more against it: so, to be quit of the premunire by act of parliament, the two provinces of Canterbury and York were forced to make the king a present of one hundred eighteen thousand eight hundred and forty pounds.

This transaction happened in the year 1531; and Cromwell, soon after, had the honour of knighthood conferred upon him, was made master of the Jewel Office, with a salary of fifty pounds a year, and sworn into the privy-council.

Having thus obtained a considerable degree of confidence and authority in the cabinet, he strenuously exerted his influence in parliament, and with the king, to forward the Reformation. The parliament favouring his designs, in 1532 an act was passed against levying the *annates* or *first fruits*, a tax imposed by the court of Rome, for confirming the institution to benefices, and the consecration of bishops. And in 1533, another act was passed against all appeals to Rome in causes cognizable in the English ecclesiastical courts. As a reward for these signal services, which increased the regal authority, Cromwell was made clerk of the Hanaper, and chancellor of the Exchequer.

In 1534 Sir Thomas Cromwell arrived at the ſummit of miniſterial power in thoſe days, for he was made principal ſecretary of ſtate, with which office he held that of maſter of the Rolls: and at the ſame time he was elected chancellor of the univerſity of Cambridge. To complete his good fortune, Anne Boleyn, who was an avowed friend to the Reformation, having been ſolemnly crowned queen of England; this event produced an open rupture with the court of Rome, Henry being excommunicated for not adhering to the papal deciſion in favour of the marriage with Catherine. Our proſperous ſtateman wanted only ſuch a violent meaſure, to juſtify thoſe that he propoſed to take for the total ſuppreſſion of the papal authority and influence in England. Accordingly, this year, the parliament enacted, that all payments to the apoſtolic chamber ſhould be aboliſhed; that all monaſteries ſhould be ſubject to the viſitation and government of the king alone; the law for puniſhing heretics was altered in their favour; and it was declared to be no hereſy, to ſpeak or write againſt the pope's authority: in theſe regulations the convocation likewiſe concurred.

The following year Sir Thomas Cromwell was appointed Viſitor General of all the monaſteries, and other religious communities throughout England; and as this office was of too extenſive a nature to be executed by him in perſon, he nominated ſundry commiſſioners under him, who have been charged, by the Roman writers, with great exceſſes and cruelties in the exerciſe of their commiſſions. But no credit is to be given to the legends of the monks or their partiſans, who would not fail to blacken the characters of thoſe who openly expoſed the ſcenes of infamous lewdneſs, fraud, and oppreſſion, practiſed in the religious houſes,

houſes, which were a diſhonour both to religion and humanity.

The king, from the informations daily laid before him concerning the ſcandalous lives of the monks and friars, judged it neceſſary to ſhew that Cromwell enjoyed his entire confidence and eſteem; he therefore gave him the cuſtody of the privy ſeal on the ſecond of July, 1536; on the ninth of the ſame month, he was made a peer, by the title of lord Cromwell, baron of Okeham in Rutlandſhire; and on the 18th he was advanced to a new dignity, unknown in the kingdom before this time, and which may be properly ſtyled the higheſt and the firſt under the Reformation. He was conſtituted Vicar-General and Vicegerent over all the ſpirituality under the king, now declared "Supreme Head of the Church." This high office gave him precedence next to the royal family; it ſubmitted all eccleſiaſtical cauſes to his juriſdiction; and gave him a ſeat in the convocation, as the king's repreſentative, above the archbiſhops.

A moſt unfavourable event however had taken place only a ſhort time before Cromwell's elevation to this important office, which might have proved fatal to the Reformation, if Henry's hopes of gain from the ſuppreſſion of the monaſteries had not overcome his inward attachment to the Romiſh faith. Queen Anne Boleyn had fallen a victim to his inſatiable luſt; for having indulged a paſſion for Jane Seymour, a lady of ſtrict virtue, who would not liſten to him on any other terms but thoſe of aſcending the throne, he encouraged an accuſation of incontinence brought againſt the queen, founded ſolely on ſome perſonal levities in her conduct; upon which charge ſhe was tried, unjuſtly condemned, and tyrannically put to death on the 19th of May, 1536; and, that no doubt might remain of the real motive, the king was married

the

the very next day to Jane Seymour, daughter of Sir John Seymour, and one of the late queen's attendants.

This revolution revived the hopes of the Popish party, and obliged lord Cromwell to proceed with great caution in the exercise of the powers of his new office. However, he ventured this year to publish some articles of religion which differed in many essential points from the Roman catholic. Seven sacraments were received in the church of Rome; but the new articles mentioned only three, namely, baptism, penance, and the eucharist. The Bible, the Apostle's, the Nicene, and the Athanasian creeds, were made the standards of the religion of the state, and the doctrine of purgatory was declared to be doubtful. The clergy were likewise enjoined, by the vicegerent, to preach up the king's supremacy, and to prevent offerings of incense and kneeling to images, lest the vulgar should be led away by idolatry and superstition.

His next care was to encourage the translation of the Bible into English; and, when accomplished, he ordered a copy to be provided in every parish, at the expence of the minister and the parishioners, and to be placed in the churches, for the inspection of persons of every rank, as well laymen as clergy. Parents and guardians of youth were likewise ordered to teach them the Lord's prayer, the creed, the ten commandments, in their mother tongue.

As these measures directly struck at the root of the Romish religion, and menaced its speedy extirpation, a formidable party, headed by the Popish clergy, excited insurrections in different parts of the kingdom; and the rebels of Yorkshire had the insolence to demand, that lord Cromwell should be brought to condign punishment, as one of the subverters of the good laws of the realm; but

but these disturbances, being quelled, were so far from alienating the affection of the king from him, that, in the year 1537, as a farther token of his esteem, his majesty constituted him chief justice itinerant of all the forests beyond Trent; and, on the 26th of August, the same year, he was installed knight of the garter, as also dean of the cathedral church of Wells. In the following year, he obtained a grant of the castle and lordship of Okeham, in the county of Rutland, and was made constable of Caresbrook castle in the Isle of Wight; and, as he had been so instrumental in pulling down the monasteries for three years together, the king amply rewarded him for that service, in the year 1539, with many noble manors and large estates, that were formerly the property of those dissolved houses; and likewise advanced him to the dignities of earl of Essex and lord high chamberlain of England.

Cromwell's acceptance of these great honours drew upon him an additional weight of envy and ill-will: for there were then alive several branches of the noble family of Bourchier, the last earl of Essex, who broke his neck by a fall from a young unruly horse; and these might justly think that they were entitled to the dignity of the late earl. The office of lord high chamberlain too had been for many years hereditary in the ancient and honourable family of the de Veres, earls of Oxford; so that, upon the death of John de Vere, lord chamberlain, the heirs of it could not but be highly incensed against a person so meanly descended, for depriving them of what their ancestors had so long enjoyed. Add likewise, that, on the same day that lord Cromwell was created earl of Essex, Gregory his son was, by his interest, made baron Cromwell of Okeham; he being on the 12th of March, 1540, put in commission with others to sell the abbey lands at twenty years purchase; which

which was a thing he adviſed the king to do, as the ſureſt way to ſtop the clamours of the people, to conciliate their affections, and bring them to an acquieſcence in the diſſolution of the monaſteries.

Lord Cromwell's proſperity had been hitherto uninterrupted; but ſuch is the uncertainty of human events, that his ruin was occaſioned by an unhappy precaution he took to ſecure his power; and the greater his exaltation, the more ſudden and fatal was his fall. In the year 1537 died queen Jane Seymour, two days after the birth of a prince, afterwards Edward VI. and Henry having overcome his real grief for the loſs of this favourite wife, in the year 1539, began to turn his thoughts upon a German alliance; and, as the Lutheran princes were extremely diſguſted againſt the emperor, on account of the perſecution of their religion, he hoped, by matching himſelf into one of thoſe families, to renew an amity which he regarded as uſeful to him. Cromwell joyfully ſeconded this motion; and perceiving that ſome of his bittereſt enemies, particularly Stephen Gardiner, biſhop of Wincheſter, began to be more in favour at court than himſelf, he exerted his utmoſt endeavours to bring about a marriage between the king and Anne of Cleves: for he imagined that a queen of his own making would powerfully ſupport his intereſt; and, as the friends of Anne of Cleves were all proteſtants, their intereſt would aſſiſt him in deſtroying that of the popiſh faction, now prevailing again at court. But when Henry ſaw this princeſs, concerning whoſe perſon he had been deceived by a flattering picture, he declared ſhe was a great Flanders mare, and he could never bear her any affection. He married her, however, which Cromwell thought would be the means of reconciling him to her; but when he came, full of anxious expectation the morning after the nuptials,

to

to enquire how the king found his bride, he had the mortification to be told, that his majesty hated her worse than ever; that he was resolved never to cohabit with her, and even suspected her to be no maid. However, Henry continued to be civil to the new queen, and even seemed to repose his usual confidence in Cromwell; but though he exerted this command over his temper, a discontent lay lurking in his breast, and was ready to break forth on the first opportunity: nor was it long before such a one offered as enabled him at once to gratify his resentment, and ingratiate himself with the public.

The meanness of Cromwell's birth had rendered him odious to all the nobility; the Roman catholics detested him, for having been so active in the dissolution of religious houses; and being encouraged by the duke of Norfolk, and Gardiner, bishop of Winchester, they raised so violent a clamour against him, that Henry, who was now as ready to hearken to his accusers as he was before deaf to them, finding that several articles were ready to be brought against him, resolved to sacrifice him to that revengeful party, whose favour he was now courting on another account; which was a scheme he had planned, to marry Catherine Howard, the duke of Norfolk's niece, if by any means he could procure a divorce from the princess of Cleves; which Norfolk and Gardiner undertook to accomplish, if they were once fairly rid of Cromwell. Accordingly, the duke of Norfolk obtained a commission to arrest the earl of Essex at the council board, on the 10th of June, 1540, when he did not in the least suspect it. He was carried from the palace to the Tower, without knowing his accusers, or the crimes of which he was accused; yet, from his first commitment, he made no doubt of a design being laid against his

his life, becauſe the duke of Norfolk had always been his profeſſed enemy.

On the 17th of the ſame month, a bill of attainder againſt him was brought into the houſe of lords. He was accuſed of hereſy and treaſon; of ſetting perſons at liberty, convicted of miſpriſion of treaſon, without the king's aſſent; of receiving bribes; and of having granted licences to carry corn, money, horſes, and other things out of the kingdom, contrary to the king's proclamation. But what ſufficiently ſhewed the ſpirit of the party, was a charge of having diſperſed many erroneous books among the king's ſubjects, contrary to the belief of the ſacraments Several other things were alleged, equally frivolous, and though he had cleared himſelf from every accuſation in letters to the king during his confinement; yet, when brought to his trial, if it may be called ſuch, barely to hear the charge, he was not ſuffered to ſpeak in his own defence, and the bill of attainder paſſed both houſes, after ſome alterations made in the lower houſe, where it was retarded ten days.

"It is plain to perceive," ſays Burnet, "that moſt of the articles of his impeachment related to orders and directions he had given, for which, it is very probable, he had the king's warrant. And, for the matter of hereſy, the king had proceeded ſo far towards a reformation, that what he did that way was, in all probability, done by the king's orders: but the king now falling from theſe things, it was thought they intended to ſtifle him by ſuch an attainder, that he might not diſcover the ſecret orders or directions he had given him for his own juſtification. For the particulars of bribery and extortion, with which he was alſo charged, they being mentioned in general expreſſions, ſeem only caſt into the heap to defame him. But for treaſonable words which were alleged againſt him,

him, it was generally thought, that they were a contrivance of his enemies; since it seemed a thing very extravagant, for a favourite in the height of his greatness, to talk so rudely, that if he had been guilty of it, Bedlam was a fitter place for his restraint than the Tower. Nor was it judged likely, that, he having such great and watchful enemies at court, any such discourses should have lain so long secret; or, if they had come to the king's knowledge, he was not a prince of such a temper as to have forgiven, much less employed and advanced a man, after such discourses. And to think, that, during fifteen months after the words were said to have been spoken, none would have had the zeal for the king, or the malice to Cromwell, to repeat them, were things that could not be believed."

The earl of Essex had, in his fall, the common fate of all disgraced ministers; to be forsaken by his friends, and insulted by his enemies. Archbishop Cranmer alone did not abandon him in his distress, but wrote to the king very warmly in his behalf. In his letter he expressed himself to this purpose: "Who cannot but be sorrowful and amazed, that he should be a traitor against your majesty; he, that was so advanced by your majesty; he, whose surety was only by your majesty; he, who loved your majesty (as I ever thought) no less than God; he, who studied always to set forward whatsoever was your majesty's will and pleasure; he that cared for no man's displeasure to serve your majesty; he that was such a servant, in my judgement, in wisdom, diligence, faithfulness, and experience, as no prince in this realm ever had; he that was so vigilant to preserve your majesty from all treasons, that few could be so secretly conceived, but he detected the same in the beginning? If the

the noble princes, of happy memory, king John, Henry II. and Richard II. had had ſuch a counſellor about them, I ſuppoſe they ſhould never have been ſo traiterouſly abandoned and overthrown as thoſe good princes were."

But the duke of Norfolk, and the reſt of the Popiſh party, baffled all the application that was made in favour of the earl of Eſſex, who in purſuance of his attainder was ſentenced to be beheaded on Tower-hill, the 28th of July, 1540. Upon the ſcaffold, in tenderneſs to his ſon, he avoided all complaints againſt his enemies; and, inſtead of vindicating himſelf, by a happy turn of thought, he acknowledged that he had offended God by his ſins, and thus merited death. He prayed for the king, and the prince, and then told the people, that he died in the catholic faith; but by this he evidently meant, the faith eſtabliſhed by the new articles on the ſcriptures; and this is confirmed, notwithſtanding the aſſertions of Popiſh authors, by his praying in Engliſh and to God through Chriſt, without any invocation of the Virgin Mary, or the ſaints.

After a ſhort time paſſed in private devotions, he gave the ſignal to the executioner, who, being either unſkilful or timid, cruelly mangled the unfortunate victim.

Thus fell Thomas Cromwell, earl of Eſſex; a ſtateſman of great abilities, joined with uncommon application to buſineſs. He had the public welfare at heart, which he purſued with great vigour and perſeverance; but he ſometimes extended the royal prerogative, at the expence of civil liberty. In his perſon he was comely; in his deportment manly and graceful; and, though raiſed from a low to the moſt elevated ſtation, his character was free from pride, or arrogance. He was courteous and affable; eaſy of acceſs; a friend to the poor and

and distressed; and remarkably charitable, no less than 200 persons being fed twice every day at his house in Throgmorton-street. To his dependents and domestics he was a kind and liberal master; and for his gratitude to his friends and benefactors, he was an example highly worthy of imitation.

*** *Authorities.* Burnet's history of the Reformation. Salmon's Chronological Historian. British Biography, *&c.*

The LIFE of

THOMAS HOWARD,

DUKE OF NORFOLK,

(With Memoirs of his family, particularly Sir EDWARD HOWARD, Lord High Admiral of England.)

(A. D. 1492, to 1547.)

THIS nobleman having gained an ascendancy over the king for a short time, upon the fall of the earl of Essex, and the elevation of Catherine Howard his niece to be queen consort, the reader is presented in this place with the few memoirs we have of him upon record, in order to preserve a regular chain of historical facts, from the accession to the death of Henry VIII.

The progenitor of this illuſtrious family was John Howard, created duke of Norfolk by Richard III. in 1483, who at the ſame time created his ſon Thomas Howard earl of Surrey; but the duke being ſlain fighting on the part of Richard at the battle of Boſworth Field, and his ſon being in the ſame ſervice, his title was forfeited on the acceſſion of Henry VII. However, in the fourth year of the reign of this prince, he was ſo far reſtored to the king's favour, that he appointed him to be one of his privy-council, and permitted him to reſume the title of earl of Surrey, and to take his ſeat in the houſe of peers. Afterwards, becoming very uſeful to the king in ſuppreſſing the inſurrections of the Scots, he was made lord treaſurer of England in 1499, about which time his two ſons, Thomas and Edward, began to be known at court, but the date of their birth is not aſcertained. In the firſt year of Henry VIII. the father, being continued high treaſurer, was likewiſe made Earl Marſhal of England: he attended the king at the ſieges of Terouenne and Tournay; and upon his return to England was appointed general againſt the Scots, whom he defeated at the famous battle of Floudon Field, in 1513. His eldeſt ſon Thomas, whoſe life we are now entering upon, and Edmund Howard, a third ſon, ſerved under him in this battle; which proved fatal to the Scots, their ſovereign, James IV. being ſlain in the action.

In conſideration of the gallant ſervices performed by the earl of Surrey and his ſons, their father had the title of duke of Norfolk conferred upon him, and his eldeſt ſon was created earl of Surrey; by which creation he took his ſeat in the houſe of peers, not as the duke's ſon but in his own right.

Here we muſt leave him for the preſent, while we do honour to the memory of his ſecond bro-

ther

ther Sir Edward Howard, a gallant naval officer, who, ſo early as 1492, diſcovered a deciſive inclination for the ſea-ſervice, having embarked as a volunteer on board the fleet commanded by Sir Edward Poynings, and ſent by Henry VII. to aſſiſt the duke of Burgundy againſt his rebellious ſubjects. For his ſignal bravery in this expedition, he had the honour of knighthood conferred upon him; and on the acceſſion of Henry VIII. he made choice of Sir Edward to be his ſtandard-bearer, a moſt diſtinguiſhed office in thoſe days.

In 1511, Sir Edward Howard, by the recommendation and intereſt of his father, who was then of the privy-council, was appointed by the king to command two ſhips, commiſſioned to clear the narrow ſeas of Scotch pirates, the moſt notorious of whom was one Sir Andrew Barton, ſuſpected to be countenanced by James IV. of Scotland. In this expedition, his eldeſt brother, then Sir Thomas Howard, ſerved under him, and, being ſeparated by a ſtorm, had the honour of engaging the Scotch ſhip commanded by Barton, who was killed in the engagement; but Sir Edward took Barton's other ſhip, and both were brought triumphantly into the river Thames.

The following year, Sir Edward Howard was made lord high-admiral of England, in which capacity he performed ſignal ſervices againſt the French, with whom Henry was then at war; and in 1513 he put to ſea with forty-two ſhips of the line, and forced the French fleet to take ſhelter in the harbour of Breſt. Upon intelligence of the event, the king of France ordered Pregent, one of his ableſt naval-officers, to ſail from Toulon, with a ſquadron of gallies, to endeavour to join the Breſt fleet, and then to engage the Engliſh. Sir Edward Howard, having information of this deſign, formed a plan for burning the French fleet

in the harbour, before the arrival of Pregent: but, being willing to let the king have the honour of commanding in perſon at the execution of an enterpriſe the ſucceſs of which he did not in the leaſt doubt, he wrote home to that effect; but, his letter being laid before the council, it was reſolved to be an imprudent meaſure, to adviſe the king to venture his perſon in ſuch a dangerous attempt: the anſwer to Sir Edward was therefore couched rather in terms of reproof from the council, ordering him to do his duty, and not ſeek excuſes. The admiral's bravery being, long before this event, firmly eſtabliſhed, he was greatly mortified at this rebuke; and perhaps it was owing to this circumſtance, that he put in practice his conſtant maxim, "that a ſeaman never did good, who was not reſolute to a degree of madneſs;" for, ſoon after, he made an attempt to enter the harbour with fifteen hundred men, in boats; but, the French coming down to the number of ten thouſand to line the ſhore, he abandoned this deſign, and engaged in another not leſs brave, but equally raſh. Receiving intelligence, that Pregent was arrived in *Conquette Bay*, a little below Breſt, with ſix gallies and four tenders, watching an opportunity to get into Breſt; he manned the only two gallies he had in his fleet with ſome of his braveſt men, and with two row-barges and two tenders entered the bay. A briſk gale bringing them very ſoon along-ſide of the enemy, Sir Edward Howard, having grappled his galley to that of the fourth admiral, reſolutely boarded her, accompanied only by eighteen Engliſhmen and one Spaniard: but unfortunately the grappling tackle either ſlipped or was cut away, by which means his galley was turned adrift, before any more of his men could board the enemy; he and his followers were left to the mercy of the French admiral, and, diſdaining

ing

ing to submit, were pushed over-board by the soldiers with their pikes, and perished in the sea. Such was the untimely fate of the brave Sir Edward Howard; who was succeeded in his office of high admiral by his eldest brother Sir Thomas, who revenged Sir Edward's death on the French, by clearing the seas so effectually of the ships of that nation, that not a vessel durst appear. He also ravaged the coasts of Brittany; and for this and other services he was, as we have before observed, created a peer in 1514.

The same year a peace being concluded with France, the new earl of Surrey had no opportunity to exercise his military abilities till 1519, when the affairs of Ireland requiring the presence of an able general, to quell the insurrections and bloody contests of the chiefs, he was appointed lord deputy of that kingdom; which office he executed with such vigour and address, that, without proceeding to any great severities, he suppressed the rebellion of the earl of Desmond, humbled the O'Neals and O'Carrols, and restored public tranquillity; which gained him the esteem and veneration of the people.

In 1522, he was recalled to take the command of the combined fleets of Henry VIII. and the Emperor Charles V. these princes having declared war against France, and entered into a close alliance. The earl of Surrey sailed with the united fleets for the coast of Normandy; and, landing some troops at Cherburgh, they ravaged all the adjacent country, and being re-embarked the fleets returned to Portland. But, in a short time after, the admiral invaded Brittany, took the town of Morlaix by assault, pillaged it, and burnt seventeen sail of French ships; and then made for the port of Southampton, where he arrived in safety, with a very considerable booty. At Southampton he

found the Emperor Charles V. who had made a short visit to Henry, ready to embark for Spain. The earl of Surrey therefore gave the command of the fleets to the vice admiral Sir William Fitz-Williams, afterwards earl of Southampton, with cruising orders; while he should convoy the emperor, in his own ship, to the port of St. Andero, in Biscay.

In the following year, upon the resignation of the aged duke of Norfolk his father, he was made lord high treasurer; and about the same time the king nominated him general of the army then raising to invade Scotland. The duke of Albany was regent of Scotland at this period, for James V. a minor; but the earl of Surrey made such devastation in the shires of Tweedale and March, that before the end of the year he was glad to solicit for a truce, which Henry having granted, the earl of Surrey returned to England, and the army was disbanded.

Historians fix the death of his father nearly at this period, to whose title and remaining honours he succeeded; for the king thereupon granted the new duke of Norfolk the high office of Earl Marshal of England.

In 1524, he attended the king to France, and was sent ambassador extraordinary to Francis I. upon the occasion of that monarch's intended interview with the pope. From this time, we meet with no transaction worthy our notice respecting the duke, except the steady opposition he made to Cromwell's administration; but, when the suppression of the monasteries had caused an open rebellion in the North, we find him again called forth in 1537 to assist the earl of Shrewsbury, who had the chief command in suppressing it; and though obliged, in his military capacity, to act against the people whose cause he had at heart, for

for he was a violent enemy to the Reformation, he seems from this time, in his quality of a courtier, to have set every engine at work to ruin Cromwell. This point being accomplished, through the female influence of his niece Catherine Howard, the duke, in conjunction with Gardiner bishop of Winchester, once more raised the expectations of the Popish party, by exciting the king to revive the persecution of heretics, and to enforce the observance of the six bloody articles of religion. Much about the same time, they laid a plot to take off archbishop Cranmer, the only remaining champion for the Reformation in any credit at court; but of this more ample mention will be made in the life of Cranmer.

The last military service performed by the duke of Norfolk, was his commanding an army against the Scots in the latter end of the year 1542, war having been declared against James V. who died soon after. Upon this expedition, he gave fresh proofs of his bravery, and of his eminent abilities as a general.

But the discovery of the queen's incontinence, which had been followed by her conviction and execution, the beginning of this year, had given the enemies of the duke, and of the Popish cause, an opportunity, during his absence in Scotland, to fill the king's mind with alarming suspicions, whose fears and jealousies increased as his health declined. It was suggested, that the duke of Norfolk was a popular man; and that he, and his son Henry earl of Surrey, had formed a design to seize the person of the king, to engross the administration of the government, and probably to set aside the succession of prince Edward, upon the strength of the statute by which the issue of Anne Boleyn had been declared illegitimate. Considering the power and influence of the duke and

his son with the adherents to the old religion, who formed the majority throughout the kingdom, a prince, less subject to jealousy than Henry, might have been justified in having a watchful eye over the duke, especially as he had the chief command of the army. But nothing could justify his tyrannic proceedings, after it fully appeared that no criminal charge could be maintained against either the duke or his son.

After his return from Scotland, the duke of Norfolk found a visible alteration in the king's conduct towards him. He was no longer summoned to attend the cabinet council; and having complained of this privately to Mrs. Holland, his mistress, she brought this in evidence against him, with some other trifling speeches made to her in confidence, which amounted to no more than the innocent repinings of a slighted courtier. But, unfortunately for the young earl of Surrey, he had frequently expressed his detestation of this woman, who now scrupled no forgeries to accomplish his ruin. A quarrel likewise subsisted between the duke and his duchess, on account of the duke's open infidelity to the marriage-bed, which she had the cruelty to revenge by joining his accusers and avowed enemies. In consequence of the informations given in to the council against them, the duke and his son were arrested for high treason, and committed to the Tower. Here the duke, according to the king's usual custom, was treated with great rigour, being obliged to petition the council to be allowed some books; and at length, in the course of his confinement, he was obliged to solicit for a change of sheets; so little regard did the unfeeling monarch shew to the high rank and great merit of this old and faithful servant.

In hopes of obtaining a pardon, or greater indulgence in his confinement, the duke meanly made

made his submission to the king in a pathetic letter, and signed a confession, which hastened the fate of his son: for he acknowledged it as his greatest crime, that he had concealed the manner in which his son bore his coat of arms; thereby acknowledging such bearing to be a crime. It seems the earl of Surrey quartered the arms of England with those of Norfolk, as a descendent of Edward IV. his mother, the duke's first wife, being the daughter of that monarch. The earl's half-sister, the duchess of Richmond, and his stepmother the duchess of Norfolk, used their joint endeavours to cut off this unfortunate youth; the former giving in evidence, that her brother had a crown, instead of an earl's coronet, to his arms on his seals, and a cypher which had the appearance of the royal signet. On these frivolous charges he was tried by an ignorant jury of commoners at Guildhall, found guilty of high treason, and beheaded on Tower-hill the 19th of January, 1547. This accomplished youth was no less valiant than learned, and of excellent hopes. He was a lover of the Muses, and a reformer of English poetry.

It was intended that the duke should share the same fate in a few days, the bill of attainder having passed the House of Lords; but in the House of Commons, fortunately for him, it met with some delay: but the king perceiving his own end approaching, and desirous to send Norfolk out of the world first, that he might not disturb the reign of his successor, commanded the Commons to hasten the bill; upon which it was passed, and the royal assent being given by commission, the king being too weak to sign it, the duke's execution was fixed for the 29th; but on the morning of the 28th of January, 1547, Henry expired, in the 56th year of his age, and the 38th of his reign; by which the warrant became null and void; and the coun-

cil judging it highly imprudent to commence a new reign with the death of so popular a nobleman, his sentence was not carried into execution.

We have now conducted the reader to the close of the turbulent reign of Henry VIII. and as the thread of history requires us to enter upon that of his successor Edward VI. we must beg leave to consider the duke of Norfolk as dead in law at this period; which was the case during the whole reign of Edward VI. for he was not released from the Tower, nor his attainder taken off, till the accession of Queen Mary, in the beginning of whose reign his natural death happened, in an advanced age.

But it must likewise be remembered, that we have not taken leave of the age of Henry VIII. to which we shall be obliged to return, in tracing the early transactions of some eminent men, who began to flourish under him, but who rose to the summit of reputation, and finished their career of earthly glory, in the reigns of his successors, Edward and Mary.

The student in history, we apprehend, will be much better pleased, and find it more to his advantage, to cast a retrospect on past events regularly connected, than, for the sake of one life, extended to an extraordinary length (such as archbishop Cranmer's), to confuse the whole series of history during three reigns, by introducing it too early.

*** *Authorities.* Biog. Britan. Rapin's History of England. Salmon's Chronological Historian. British Biography.

The

The LIFE of
EDWARD SEYMOUR,
DUKE of SOMERSET.

(Including Memoirs of his brother, Sir THOMAS SEYMOUR, Lord SUDLEY.)

(A. D. 1537, to 1552.)

EDWARD SEYMOUR was the ſon of Sir John Seymour, and brother to Jane Seymour, third wife of Henry VIII. and mother of Edward VI. No mention is made of this gentleman in hiſtory till after the death of the queen his ſiſter, when the king, in honour to the memory of this amiable lady, and intending that the prince ſhould always have ſo near a relation about his perſon, created him earl of Hertford, in 1537. He had, indeed, been made a peer, upon the king's marriage, by the title of Viſcount Beauchamp; but he neither held any diſtinguiſhed rank, nor enjoyed any confidential office at court, till he was earl of Hertford. Even for ſome time after, the intereſt of the duke of Norfolk and his friends prevailed ſo far againſt his promotion, that he did not enjoy any conſiderable ſhare of the king's confidence till after the diſgrace of that nobleman; but in 1546 he was appointed lord chamberlain.

Upon the death of Henry, the earl of Hertford repaired to Enfield, where his nephew, the new ſovereign, reſided, to inform him of his father's de-

ceaſe, and to conduct him to London; where, being a prince of the moſt amiable endowments, and of whom the people had conceived the higheſt expectations, he was received with unuſual demonſtrations of joy; and his acceſſion was conſidered as the æra of deliverance from tyrannic cruelty, and bloody religious perſecution.

As Edward VI. was not yet ten years of age, his father had appointed ſixteen executors, to whom, during the minority, was entruſted the whole regal authority. But it was ſuggeſted, after Henry's death, that it muſt be very troubleſome for the people, and eſpecially for foreign miniſters, to be under a neceſſity of applying to ſixteen perſons of equal authority, and it was propoſed that ſome one ſhould be choſen head and preſident, with the title of protector. This motion was vigorouſly oppoſed by the lord chancellor Wriotheſley, who eaſily perceived that the dignity would be conferred on the earl of Hertford, by which means his own power, being by his office, as things then ſtood, the ſecond perſon in the regency, would ſuffer great diminution. But the earl had ſo great a party in the council, that the queſtion being put, it was carried in the affirmative; and it was unanimouſly agreed, on account of his relation to the king, and his experience in ſtate affairs, that he ſhould be declared regent and governor of the king's perſon; which was accordingly done; but with this expreſs condition, that he ſhould not undertake or perform any thing without the conſent of all the other executors to Henry's will.

The lord chancellor, who made the greateſt oppoſition to the earl of Hertford's advancement, could expect but little favour from the new protector. The jealouſy that ſubſiſted between them ſoon became very conſpicuous; and the nation,

being then divided between those who were attached to the old superstition, and those who desired a compleat reformation, the protector set himself at the head of the latter party, and the lord chancellor of the former; and, shortly after, the protector was created duke of Somerset, at the same time that others of the regents and counsellors had new dignities conferred on them, upon the testimony of certain witnesses, to whom king Henry, just before his death, had opened his mind, concerning the honours he proposed to confer on those he distinguished with so high a trust. But besides the secular honours conferred on the duke of Somerset, we are informed by bishop Burnet, that he had six good prebends promised him; two of these being afterwards converted into a deanery and treasurership: and on the sixth of February, 1547, he knighted the king, being empowered so to do by letters patent. For as the laws of chivalry required that the king should receive knighthood from the hands of some other knight, so it was judged too great a presumption for his own subject to give it, without a warrant under the great seal.

The lord chancellor Wriothesly earl of Southampton was, as has been already observed, the protector's adversary, and a great enemy to the Reformation. The protector therefore wished to remove him, as did likewise the major part of the regents; and he soon afforded them a plausible pretence. Resolving to apply himself chiefly to affairs of state, he had, on the 18th of February, put the great seal into commission, directed to the master of the rolls, and three masters in chancery, empowering them to execute the lord chancellor's office in the court of chancery in as ample a manner as if he himself were present. This being done by his own authority, without any

warrant

warrant from the lord protector and the other regents, complaint was made to the council, and it was ordered, that the judges should give their opinions concerning the case, in writing. Their answer was, that the chancellor being only entrusted with his office, he could not commit the exercise thereof to others, without the royal consent, that by so doing he had by the common law forfeited his place, and was liable to fine and imprisonment during the king's pleasure. The chancellor fell into a great passion with the judges on this opinion being delivered in council; and he went so far as to tell the protector, that he held his office of lord chancellor by an undoubted authority, since he held it from the king himself; whereas it was a great question whether he was lawfully protector. But this haughtiness accelerating his disgrace, he was immediately confined to his house till farther orders. Then it was debated what his punishment should be: it was not judged expedient to divest him of his share in the regency; but, to render it useless to him, he was left under an arrest, and the great seal was taken from him, and given to Sir William Pawlet lord St. John, till another chancellor should be appointed. He remained in confinement till the 19th of July 1547; when he was released, upon entering into a recognizance of four thousand pounds, to pay whatever fine the court should think fit to impose upon him.

After the protector had got rid of this troublesome rival, he resolved to obtain the sole administration of the government; and with this view he represented to the regents and the council, that it was controverted by several persons, whether they could, by their sole authority, name a protector; that the French ambassador in particular had hinted, that he did not think he could safely treat with

with him, without knowing whether he was duly authoriſed, ſince his title might be conteſted, for the want of authority in thoſe who had conferred it. To obviate this difficulty, the protector and the council, on the 13th of March, 1547, petitioned the king, that they might act by a commiſſion under the great ſeal, which might authorize and juſtify their proceedings. This patent being drawn and the great ſeal ſet to it, the protector became abſolute, having the council, which conſiſted of his own friends, at command. But, on the other hand, this ſtep, with ſome others of the like nature which he made afterwards, drew upon him the ill will and envy of many perſons, particularly the nobility, who, in the end, made him feel the effects of their reſentment. The intrigues of the courtiers were however ſuſpended for the preſent by national concerns of a more important nature.

Henry VIII. had earneſtly recommended it to his ſucceſſor, to effectuate, if poſſible, the deſign which he had formed to unite the two kingdoms of England and Scotland, by a marriage between his ſon and Mary the young queen of Scotland, daughter of James V. then an infant, and afterwards too well known in hiſtory by her crimes and her misfortunes. A treaty for this marriage had been ratified by the regent and parliament of Scotland; but, in a month after, the regent, the earl of Arran, ſecretly joined the party of cardinal Beatoun, who was in the intereſt of France, and ſuddenly renounced the treaty with England. In reſentment of this perfidious conduct, Henry declared war againſt that nation, two years before his death. The protector, therefore, now prepared to carry it on again with vigour, and, having raiſed an army of 18,000 men, he marched into Scotland, accompanied by the earl of Warwick,

afterwards duke of Northumberland, and his ſucceſſor in the miniſtry, who was his lieutenant-general. On his arrival in Scotland, the protector publiſhed a manifeſto, in which he urged many reaſons to induce the Scots to conſent to the marriage, but theſe having no effect, hoſtilities immediately enſued.

The earl of Arran had collected together the whole force of Scotland, to oppoſe the Engliſh army: but, though the Scots brought near double the number of forces into the field, the Engliſh gained a complete victory in the famous battle of Pinkey or Muſſelburgh, fought on the 10th of September, 1547. According to the moſt moderate computation, the Scotch had 10,000 ſlain, and the Engliſh not 200. After this victory, the protector marched to Edinburgh, which he took and burnt; and then having taken Leith, with ſeveral other places of inferior note, he retired from Scotland, leaving the earl of Warwick to command the army, with full powers to treat with the regent's commiſſioners, who now ſued for peace; but this was only an artifice, to gain time for the arrival of ſuccours from France, and therefore no commiſſioners appeared.

The political talents of the protector were by no means equal to his ambition, or the high ſtation he held; and having created a number of enemies among the nobility, and the reſt of the late king's executors, whom he had excluded from the regency, by aſſuming the ſole power, cabals were formed againſt him during his abſence in Scotland. The intelligence ſent to him by his friends of theſe intrigues, increaſed the errors of his conduct in that expedition; for, inſtead of purſuing the advantages that his victory had given him, by proceeding to Stirling, where he might have got poſſeſſion of the young queen, and thus

have

have terminated the war, he precipitately haſtened to England, and implicitly left the army under the command of a nobleman, who did not wiſh ſucceſs to any enterpriſe which would increaſe the protector's power or popularity.

Somerſet's enemies unfortunately found a proper tool, to accompliſh his ruin, in his own family. Sir Thomas Seymour, his youngeſt brother, had been left in England, a man of an envious and haughty diſpoſition. He thought it hard that he ſhould only be a privy-counſellor, when the king had made his brother one of the regents. He imagined, that, being uncle to the king, he was intitled to much higher honour; and though, at his nephew's coronation, he was created lord Sudley, and in the ſame year was conſtituted lord high admiral of England, he was miſled by the flattering deluſions of ambition. Indeed, the admiral, immediately after Henry's death, diſcovered his aſpiring temper, by paying his addreſſes to the princeſs Elizabeth; but, meeting with a repulſe, he ſolicited Catherine Parr, the queen dowager, and, having obtained her conſent, married her privately, without communicating it to the duke his brother. But at length, finding means to procure a letter from the king, recommending him to the queen for a huſband, as ſoon as he got this letter, he declared his private marriage, without giving himſelf any trouble about his brother. Hence their quarrel firſt took riſe: but the protector, who was endowed with one quality eſſential to a courtier, moderation, did his utmoſt to prevent their quarrel from breaking out, though he all along entertained ſecret ſuſpicions of his brother.

It is beyond a doubt, that the protector's ſecret enemies fomented the admiral's ambition, by the praiſes they beſtowed upon him, confirming him in the ill opinion he had entertained of the duke

his

his brother. He began his cabals, by gaining over the king's ſervants to his intereſt, that they might eſpouſe his cauſe with their young maſter, and endeavour to make him continue his good opinion of him. By their aſſiſtance he ſo contived it, that the king frequently came to his houſe, to viſit the admiral's wife. He ſtrictly enjoined the king's ſervants, whom he had corrupted, to let him know when his majeſty had occaſion for money, telling them, that they need not always trouble the treaſury, for he would be ready to furniſh him. By ſuch practices, lord Sudley, who was as ambitious, but not ſo honeſt as his brother, ſupplanted the protector in the king's eſteem; and, to add to the duke's misfortune, a violent quarrel happened between his ducheſs and the admiral's lady, the latter expecting from her former rank, and her peerage in her own right, not only the precedence, but that the ducheſs ſhould bear her train, which ſhe abſolutely refuſed, being, according to Sir John Haywood, a woman for many imperfections intolerable, but for pride monſtrous.

The enemies of the Seymours, therefore, deſparing of a total rupture between the two brothers, ſo ſtrongly united by blood and intereſt, by any other methods, accompliſhed the ruin of both by practiſing on their wives, whoſe animoſity overcame the ties of blood, and whoſe pride ſuperſeded their common intereſt.

The admiral, upon his brother's return, refuſed to liſten to his private remonſtrances againſt his ambitious projects, which he aſſured him could only end in his ruin; but Sudley, deaf to his intreaties, now adopted a meaſure which obliged the protector to treat him as an open enemy, and perturbator of the public tranquillity. He repreſented to the young king, that his predeceſſors, being

being minors, had governors of their royal perſons independent on, and diſtinct from the protectors of the realm; and the eaſy, credulous prince, who was grown fond of Sudley, from his condeſcenſion and indulgence, being unable to reflect deeply, from his tender age, on a propoſal highly agreeable to his own inclinations, imprudently wrote with his own hand a meſſage to the houſe of commons, deſiring them to make the admiral the governor of his perſon. This Sudley intended to have carried himſelf to the houſe, where he had a party, by whoſe means he was confident of carrying his point. He practiſed alſo with many of the nobility to aſſiſt him in it; but, when his deſign took air, the council ſent a deputation to him in his brother's name, to reaſon the caſe with him, and to prevail with him to proceed no farther. To theſe he arrogantly replied, that, if he was croſſed in his attempt, he would make this the blackeſt parliament that ever was in England: whereupon he was ſent for the next day, by order from the council, but refuſed to come. He was then ſeverely threatened, and told, that the king's writing was nothing in law; but that he, who had procured it, was liable to be puniſhed for having obtained it; and it was reſolved to diveſt him of all his offices, to ſend him to the Tower, and to proſecute him for attempting to diſturb the government. This menace terrified him; for he plainly ſaw, that though he had the king on his ſide, a young prince, who was but juſt entered into his eleventh year, would not have reſolution enough to ſupport him, contrary to the advice of the protector and the council. He choſe, therefore, to ſubmit himſelf, and his brother and he ſeemed perfectly reconciled. But though he ſeemed to have laid aſide his ambitious projects for the preſent, he only deferred the execution of them till a more favourable opportunity.

The

The success of the campaign in Scotland, though considered as imperfect by profound politicians, gained the protector fresh credit with the people; and his popularity tempted him to neglect cultivating the esteem of the nobility, whose envy his conduct daily increased. For availing himself of the powers granted him by the patent, he advised with such members of the council only as were devoted to his interest, treating the rest as mere cyphers. The best reason that can be assigned for this conduct, is his great zeal for the Reformation. This made him think it necessary to remove from the administration those who were averse to its progress, that he might lessen their opposition as much as possible. The catholic party, to strengthen their interest, engaged the princess Mary and the discontented lord to espouse their cause: and the princess wrote to the protector, to let him know, that she looked upon all innovations in religion, till the king came of age, to be incompatible with the respect due to her father's memory, and equally so with their duty to their young master, as they thereby disturbed the peace of his kingdom, and engaged his authority in such points before he was capable of forming a judgment concerning them. Some days before the meeting of the parliament in the year 1548, the lord Rich was made lord chancellor; and on the third of November, the day before the opening of the parliament, the protector, by a patent under the great seal, was warranted to sit in parliament on the right hand of the throne, under the cloth of state, whether the king was present or not, and invested with all the honours and privileges that any of the uncles of the kings of England, or any protector, had ever enjoyed. The parliament, acting now under the influence of the protector, was this year very favourable to the Reformation, particularly in passing

passing an act to abolish private masses, and to grant the cup to the people in the communion.

The restless disposition of the lord Admiral broke forth again, this year, upon an alteration which happened in his family. In the month of September the queen dowager his wife died in child-bed, but not without suspicion of poison; for the admiral had formed a deep design to become the head of the protestant party, by espousing the princess Elizabeth. The deceased queen was an amiable woman, whose conduct in every other respect, but her marriage with the admiral, too soon after the king's death, had been perfectly blameless, but she was a bigoted Roman catholic, and Sudley imagined, that this prejudiced the people against him, and in favour of his brother.

Soon after her death, therefore, he renewed his addresses to the princess Elizabeth, but without success; however, the attempt occasioned an act for declaring the marriage of the king's sisters, without the consent of the council, to be treason. Finding himself baffled in this scheme, he formed a design to carry away the king to his house at Holt, to dispossess the protector, and to seize the government himself. For this end, he laid in magazines of arms, and listed about two thousand, others say, ten thousand men. in several different places. He likewise entered into an association with several of the nobility, who envied his brother's greatness, and were not displeased to see the difference between them grown irreconcileable.

Most historians agree, that the protector being informed of all his proceedings, shewed himself extremely patient towards him, and refused to carry things to extremity, till he saw plainly, that one or other must inevitably be ruined. But, as Rapin justly observes, we cannot entirely rely upon what historians say of the admiral's private designs,

ſigns, or of the protector's forbearance; for as ſome make it their buſineſs to blacken the protector's reputation as much as poſſible, ſo others ſtrive to vindicate all his actions. It is, however, out of diſpute, that the admiral was not ſatisfied with his condition, and at laſt, his ambition appearing incurable, he was on the 19th of January 1549 committed to the Tower. The day following, the ſeal of his office was ſent for, and put into ſecretary Smith's hands: after which, many things appeared againſt him; but his fate was ſuſpended for the preſent.

In the mean time, the war with Scotland occaſioned the protector great uneaſineſs. He was very ſenſible, that it was a ridiculous thing to think of getting the king's marriage with the queen of Scotland accompliſhed by force of arms, for he knew France was preparing to ſend them a very powerful aid; and therefore he ſaw plainly, that it would be a very hard taſk to ſucceed in this undertaking. Beſides, it was very likely that this war would occaſion a rupture with France, an event that would neceſſarily retard the progreſs of the Reformation. He would have been very glad, if the regent of Scotland would have accepted a ten years truce, which he propoſed to him; but, a powerful ſuccour being expected from France, it was rejected. The protector was therefore forced, againſt his will, to continue the war; but, as he did not chuſe to put himſelf at the head of the army, he gave the command of it to Francis Talbot, earl of Shrewſbury, whom he appointed his lieutenant. On this occaſion he plainly diſcovered, that he intended to ſtretch the prerogatives of the protectorſhip as high as they could go, ſince he obliged the earl to hold his commiſſion from him. However, as the patent he had obtained the 13th of March laſt year did not ſo clearly give him the power of nominating

nominating his own lieutenant, he ordered another to be prepared, wherein his prerogatives were more fully explained and enlarged.

In this war, which was now carried on with but indifferent ſucceſs, the protector made uſe of ſome German troops; which raiſed great murmurings againſt him; for it was eaſy to perceive, that the protector's aim was to ſtrengthen his perſonal authority by the aid of theſe foreigners; and therefore this ſtep was cenſured, even by his own party.

However, the duke, thus ſtrengthened by foreign forces, devoted to the intereſt of the miniſter, by whom they had been brought into the kingdom, and were to be paid, thought this a proper opportunity to make his brother ſubmit quietly to his authority, or to ſacrifice him to his own ſafety. He, therefore, made a final attempt to win him over to his intereſt, which he did by offering him a conſiderable eſtate, if he would withdraw from court and all public buſineſs. But the hatred the admiral bore the protector being inſurmountable, on the 22d of February a full report was made to the council, with an accuſation conſiſting of thirty-three articles.

It ſeems highly probable, that lord Sudley was guilty of the crimes laid to his charge, ſince he anſwered only the three firſt articles, and that with much reluctance. The particulars of the charge were ſo manifeſtly proved, not only by witneſſes, but by letters under his own hand, that it did not ſeem poſſible to deny them. Yet, when he was firſt ſent to, and examined by ſome of the privy counſellors, he refuſed to make any direct anſwers, or to ſign the evaſive replies he had made; therefore it was ordered, that, on the next day, all the privy council, except the archbiſhop of Canterbury, and Sir John Baker ſpeaker to the houſe of commons, who was obliged to attend at the

houſe,

houſe, ſhould go to the Tower, and examine him. Accordingly, the lord chancellor, with the other privy counſellors, repaired to the Tower, and read to him the articles of accuſation: they then earneſtly deſired him to make plain anſwers, to excuſe himſelf where he could, and ſubmit where he could not, without ſhewing any obſtinacy of mind. To this he anſwered, that he expected an open trial, and to have his accuſers confronted with him. The privy-counſellors uſed all the arguments they could think of to perſuade him to be more tractable, but to no purpoſe. At laſt, the lord chancellor required him, on his allegiance, to make his anſwers. He perſiſted to refuſe making any anſwer, without having the articles left with him, that he might conſider of them at leiſure; but the counſellors would not conſent to leave them with him on thoſe terms.

On the 22d of February, 1549, it was reſolved in council, that the whole board ſhould, after dinner, acquaint the king with the ſtate of the affair, and deſire to know if it was his pleaſure that the law ſhould take place, and whether he would leave the determination of this affair to the parliament, as it had been laid before them; ſo cautiouſly did they proceed in a caſe which concerned the life of the king's uncle. But the youthful monarch had experienced his ſeditious temper, and had lately been much alienated from him. When the counſellors waited on his majeſty, the lord chancellor opened the matter to him, declaring it, as his opinion, that it ſhould be left to the parliament. Then the other counſellors gave their opinions, in which they all agreed with the lord-chancellor. The protector ſpoke laſt: he proteſted, that this event gave him the greateſt concern; that he had done his utmoſt to prevent it from coming to ſuch an extremity; but, were

it

it his ſon or brother, he muſt prefer his majeſty's ſafety to them, for he weighed his allegiance more than his blood; and that therefore he was not againſt the requeſt, that the other lords had made. He added, that if he himſelf were guilty of ſuch offences, he ſhould deſerve death; and the rather, becauſe he was, of all men, the moſt bound to his majeſty, and therefore he could not refuſe juſtice. The king's anſwer was as follows: "We perceive, that there are great things objected and laid to my lord high admiral, my uncle, and they tend to treaſon; and, we perceive, that you require but juſtice to be done; we think it reaſonable, that you proceed according to your requeſt." Which words, (as it is obſerved in the council-book) coming ſo ſuddenly from his grace's mouth, of his own motion, as the lords might perceive, they were marvellouſly rejoiced, and gave the king moſt hearty praiſe and thanks: yet reſolved, that ſome of both houſes ſhould be ſent to the admiral, before the bill ſhould be put in againſt him, to ſee what he could, or would ſay.

All this was done in order to bring him to a ſubmiſſion: the lord-chancellor, the earls of Shrewſbury, Warwick, and Southampton; Sir John Baker, Sir Thomas Cheyney, and Sir Anthony Denny, were ſent to him. He long continued obſtinate, but was at laſt prevailed upon to give an anſwer to the firſt three articles; and then he ſtopped on a ſudden, and bid them be content, for he would go no farther; and no intreaties could work on him, either to anſwer the reſt, or to ſet his hand to the anſwers he had made.

On the 25th of February, a bill of attainder was brought into the houſe of lords, and the peers had been ſo accuſtomed to agree to ſuch bills in king Henry's time, that they made no difficulty

to pass it. All the judges, and the king's council, were unanimous in their opinions, that the articles amounted to treason. Then the evidence was heard; many lords gave it so fully, that all the rest, with one voice, consented to the bill; only the protector, "for natural pity's sake," desired leave to withdraw. On the 27th, the bill was sent down to the commons, with a message, that if they desired to proceed as the lords had done, those lords that had given their evidence in their own house, should come down, and declare it to the commons. But there was much opposition made to it in the house of commons. They could not forbear exclaiming against the prevailing practice of attainders, and the irregular manner of judging the accused, without confronting them with the witnesses, or hearing their defence. It was justly thought a very unwarrantable method of proceeding, that some peers should rise up in their places, in their own house, and relate somewhat to the slander of another, and that he should thereupon be attainted. They pressed therefore that it might be done by a trial; and that the admiral might be brought to the bar, and allowed to plead for himself. They would, in all probability, have thrown out the bill, if the king had not sent them a message, that he did not think the admiral's presence necessary; and that it was sufficient they should examine the depositions, which had been produced in the house of lords.

The king having thus intimated his pleasure, the commons, in a full house of four hundred, passed the bill, not above ten or twelve voting in the negative. The royal assent was given on the 5th of March, 1549, and on the 10th of the same month, the council resolved to press the king, that justice might be done on the admiral. It is said, in the council-book, that since the case was so heavy

heavy and lamentable to the protector, though it was alſo ſorrowful to them all, they reſolved to proceed in it, ſo that neither the king, nor he ſhould be farther troubled with it. After dinner, they went to the king, the protector being with them. The king ſaid, He had well obſerved their proceedings, and thanked them for their great care of his ſafety, and commanded them to proceed in it, without farther moleſting him or the protector, and ended, "I pray you, my lords, do ſo." Upon this, the biſhop of Ely had orders to attend the admiral, to adminiſter ſpiritual advice, and to prepare him to meet his fate with patience and reſignation: and, on the 17th of March, having made report of his attendance on the admiral, the council ſigned a warrant for his execution, in purſuance whereof, the admiral was beheaded on the 20th of March, 1549.

The protector upon this occaſion incurred very ſevere cenſures, for conſenting to his death. It was ſaid, if the admiral was guilty, it was only againſt his brother, whom he would have ſupplanted, and it ſeems ſcarcely to admit of a doubt, that this ſame brother was the admiral's rival, and brought him to the ſcaffeld. Rapin juſtly obſerves, that they who had thoughts then of ruining the protector, feigning to be his friends, ſpurred him on to be revenged on his brother, and were very ready to ſerve as his inſtruments. Accordingly, this cataſtrophe increaſed the animoſity of the nobles, which was carried to the higheſt pitch, by the protector's conduct in countenancing the people upon the following juſt occaſion.

After the ſuppreſſion of the abbeys, vaſt numbers of monks were diſperſed through the kingdom, who were forced to work for their bread, their penſions being ill paid, or not ſufficient for their ſubſiſtence. Thus the work being divided

among so many hands, the profit became less than before, besides, while the monasteries stood, their lands were let out at very easy rents to farmers, who, to cultivate them, were obliged to employ a vast number of people. But after their lands were fallen into the hands of the nobility and gentry, the rents were much raised, whence it came to pass that the farmers, to make them turn to better account, were forced to employ fewer hands, and lessen the wages. On the other side, the proprietors of the lands, finding that since the last peace with France, the woollen trade flourished, bethought themselves of breeding sheep, because wool brought them in more money than corn. To that end, they caused their grounds to be inclosed. Hence arose several inconveniencies. In the first place, the price of corn was raised to the great detriment of the lower sort of people; in the next place, the landlords or their farmers had occasion only for few persons to look after their flocks in grounds so inclosed. Thus many were deprived of the means of getting a livelihood, and the profit of the lands, which was before shared by a great many, was almost wholly engrossed by the landlords. This occasioned great complaints and murmurs among the common people, who saw they were likely to be reduced to great misery; and several little books were published, setting forth the mischief which must result from such proceedings. But the nobility and gentry continued the same course notwithstanding, without being at all solicitous about the consequences. The protector openly espoused the cause of the poor people, because he was aware of the mischiefs which might arise from popular discontent; and appointed commissioners to examine, whether those who held the abbey-lands, kept hospitality, and performed all the conditions

upon

upon which thoſe lands were ſold them; but he met with ſo many obſtacles in the execution of this order, that it produced no effect.

Thus the protector continued to aggravate the hatred of the nobility and gentry, who found their account in countenancing theſe abuſes: for, in the laſt ſeſſion of parliament, the lords paſſed a bill for giving every one leave to incloſe his grounds if he pleaſed: but it was thrown out by the commons, and yet the lords and gentlemen went on incloſing their lands. This occaſioned a general diſcontent among the people, who had apprehenſions of a formed deſign to ruin them, and reduce them to a ſtate of ſlavery; upon this the common people made an inſurrection in Wiltſhire, but Sir William Herbert diſperſed them, and cauſed ſome of them to be hanged. About the ſame time there were ſimilar inſurrections in Suſſex, Hampſhire, Kent, Glouceſterſhire, Suffolk, Warwick, Eſſex, Hertfordſhire, Leiceſterſhire, Rutlandſhire, and Worceſterſhire. The protector perceiving the flames were kindling all over the kingdom, ſent to let the people know, that he was ready to redreſs their grievances. By this meaſure he ſtopped their fury; and, agreeably to his promiſe, he laid the affair before the council, hoping that ſome expedient might be found to ſatisfy the malcontents. But he met with ſo great an oppoſition, that he thought it abſolutely neceſſary to have recourſe to his ſole authority; and, therefore, contrary to the opinion of the whole council, he iſſued out a proclamation againſt all new incloſures, and granted a general pardon to the people for what was paſt. He even went farther, for he appointed commiſſioners with an unlimited power, to hear and determine cauſes about incloſures, highways, and cottages. Theſe commiſſioners were much complained of by the nobility

and gentry, who ſaid openly, that it was an invaſion of their property to ſubject them to an arbitrary power; they alſo went ſo far as to oppoſe the commiſſioners when they offered to execute their commiſſion; therefore the protector was not able to redreſs this grievance ſo fully as he deſired; and the people finding the court did not perform what was promiſed, roſe again in ſeveral places, particularly in Oxfordſhire, Devonſhire, Norfolk, and Yorkſhire. Thoſe in Oxfordſhire were immediately diſperſed by the lord Grey. The inſurrection in Devonſhire was more conſiderable and dangerous; the county abounding with people, who had only complied outwardly with the alterations made in religion, the prieſts and monks ran in among them, and uſed their utmoſt efforts to foment the rebellion. They roſe on the 10th of June, and in a ſhort time grew to be ten thouſand ſtrong. At firſt the protector neglected this affair, hoping this inſurrection might be quelled as eaſily as the others had been. At laſt, perceiving they were bent to perſiſt in their rebellion, he ſent the lord Ruſſel with a ſmall force to ſtop their proceedings. The rebellion was ſoon quelled, and during the continuance of it, the protector diſcovered by the whole tenor of his conduct, that he did not deſire to come to extremities with the rebels, being either perſuaded that the people had reaſon to complain, or, deſirous to gain their favour as a ſhield againſt the nobility, who hated him. Inſomuch, that after all the commotions were over, he moved in the council that a general pardon might be proclaimed, in order to reſtore the peace of the kingdom: but this motion met with great oppoſition; many of the council were for taking this occaſion to curb the inſolence of the people. But the protector being of another mind, gave out, by his ſole authority, a general pardon

pardon of all that had been done before the 21st of Auguſt, and excepted out of it only a few rebel priſoners. He had power to act in this manner by virtue of his patent, but it increaſed the hatred of the nobles, as well as great part of the council, who were highly mortified to ſee that they were conſulted only for form-ſake, and that their opinions were of no manner of weight. But by this prudent and moderate exertion of an illegal prerogative, it is certain, that the protector put an end to a moſt alarming rebellion, which wore the aſpect of being converted to a civil war; for both ſides had powerful partiſans, and the people were violently exaſperated againſt the land-holders. The inſurrection in Norfolk was the moſt formidable, but as it was quelled by the addreſs of the earl of Warwick, afterwards duke of Northumberland, more ample mention will be made of it in the life of that miniſter, the protector's ſubtle enemy, and ſucceſſor.

The war with Scotland had been productive of another with Henry II. of France, who aſcended the throne of that kingdom upon the death of Francis I. in 1547. A rupture with the emperor Charles V. was likewiſe to be apprehended, on account of the aſſiſtance given by the Engliſh miniſtry to the German Proteſtants his diſcontented ſubjects. This ſituation of foreign affairs was too embarraſſing for the limited capacity of the protector. Dreading the machinations of a powerful faction now formed againſt him at home, with whom the Romiſh party were ſecretly allied, he was afraid to hazard the conduct of three wars, under ſuch diſtreſſing circumſtances; and therefore reſolved to liſten to the overtures of France, that court offering peace, and its aſſiſtance to the German Proteſtants, if England would reſtore Boulogne.

While this peace was privately negociating, the earl of Warwick, and the earl of Southampton, the disgraced chancellor, who had recovered his seat in the privy council, associated themselves with about eighteen lords of the council, who agreed to withdraw from court, and openly oppose the protector.

Among many other fresh causes of jealousy, envy, and hatred against the duke, none had any effect with the public at large, except the superb palace that he was building in the Strand (Somerset-house) and as this impolitic undertaking greatly lessened his popularity, we shall borrow from Sir John Hayward's life of Edward VI. his curious relation of this interesting transaction.

"Many well-disposed minds conceived a hard opinion of him, for that a church by *Strand-bridge*, and two bishops houses were pulled down, to make a seat for his new building: in digging the foundations whereof, the bones of many who had been buried there, were cast up, and carried into the fields; and because the stones of those houses, and of the church, did nothing suffice for his work, the steeple and most part of the church of *St. John of Jerusalem*, near Smithfield, (most beautifully erected and adorned not long before, by Docray, prior of that church) was mined and overthrown with powder, and the stones applied to this spacious building. And because the work could not be therewith finished, the cloister of Paul's on the north-side of the church, in a place called *Pardon* church-yard; and *the dance of death*, very curiously wrought about the cloister, and a chapel that stood in the midst of the church-yard; also the charnel-house that stood on the south-side, with the chapel, tombs, and monuments therein, were beaten down, the bones of the dead carried into

into *Finſbury Fields*, and the ſtones converted to his building."—p. 204 & 205, edit. 1636.

It was alſo alleged by the lords, that many biſhops, and prebends had reſigned many manors to him to obtain his favour; though this was not done without leave obtained from the king: for, in a grant of ſome lands made to him by the king, on the 11th of July, in the ſecond year of his reign, it was obſerved that theſe lands were given him as a reward of his ſervices in Scotland, for which he was offered greater rewards: but, that refuſing to accept of ſuch grants as might too much impoveriſh the crown, he had taken a licence from the biſhop of Bath and Wells, for alienating ſome of the lands of that biſhopric to him. He is, in that patent, called by the grace of God, duke of Somerſet; which expreſſion, by the grace of God, had not been uſed for ſome years paſt, but in ſpeaking of ſovereign princes. It was alſo reported, that many of the chantry lands had been ſold to his friends at eaſy rates; for which they concluded he had great preſents. An uncommon proſperity had alſo raiſed him too high; ſo that he did not behave to the nobility with that condeſcenſion which might have been expected from him.

All theſe things concurred to raiſe him many enemies, and he had very few friends; for none adhered firmly to him but Paget, ſecretary Smith, and archbiſhop Cranmer, who was never known to forſake his friend. All thoſe that favoured the old ſuperſtition were his enemies; and, ſeeing the earl of Southampton at the head of the party againſt him, they all immediately joined with him. Goodrich, biſhop of Ely, tho' he was for the Reformation, likewiſe joined them. He had attended the admiral in his preparation for death, from whom he had received very ill impreſſions of the Protector. Even his enemies were ſenſible, and

he was ſenſible himſelf, that the continuance of war would inevitably ruin him, and that a peace might confirm him in his power.

This conſideration made the Protector reſolve to propoſe to the council the reſtitution of Boulogne to France: but though he backed this motion with all the reaſons he thought moſt plauſible, it was received by the council with ſigns of indignation, and conſidered as downright cowardice. It was too nice an affair for the protector to think of doing it by his own authority; and therefore, though he plainly perceived the oppoſite faction would carry it, he was willing his propoſal ſhould be debated in form.

The reſult of their conſultation was, that Boulogne ſhould not be reſtored, but that they ſhould endeavour to make an alliance with the emperor for the ſecurity of that place. Paget was appointed for the embaſſy, becauſe, being devoted to the protector, the ill ſucceſs which was expected to attend this negotiation was deſigned to be thrown upon him, in order to aſperſe the protector himſelf.

This mortifying repulſe at the council-board, was followed by an open declaration from the aſſociated lords, who uſually met at Ely-houſe, that they conſidered themſelves as the king's council, and were determined to take vigorous meaſures for the ſafety of the king and of the realm, both of which were endangered by the uſurped, unlimited power of the duke of Somerſet; and on the 6th of October, 1549, the lord St. John, preſident of the council, the earls of Southampton, Warwick, and Arundel; Sir Edward North, Sir Richard Southwel, Sir Edmund Peckham, Sir Edward Wotton, and Dr. Wotton, ſat accordingly as the king's council.

The

The protector alarmed, sent his secretary Petre to them, to know the cause of their assemblies, but instead of returning, he remained with the associated lords, embracing their party. On the 8th of the same month, they went into the city, in a body well armed, and attended with a train of servants in new liveries, to Guildhall, where finding the lord mayor, aldermen and common council assembled, notice having been previously sent to them for that purpose, the lord chancellor Rich, who with some of the great officers of state had joined the association, declared to the citizens, that the objects they had in view were, to secure the personal safety of the king, to redress the grievances of the nation, and to recover its weight and influence at foreign courts, by removing the duke of Somerset from the king's person and councils, whose mal-administration had been the cause of all the misfortunes which had befallen the realm, both in its foreign and domestic concerns for some time past. Upon this declaration, the city expressed an entire approbation of the measures taken by the lords; but when a requisition was made, that the city should supply them with 2000 men to enable them to oppose the measures of the protector, who had removed the king from Hampton-court to Windsor, and had armed all his dependants; one George Sadlowe, a common-council-man, opposed the motion, though supported by the recorder; and after justly observing, that the mayor had received a letter from the king, commanding the aid of 1000 men to protect his person against the designs of the lords, he advised his fellow citizens to observe a strict neutrality, by not granting any armed force to either party.

But the duke of Somerset, struck with a panic, on being informed that the lords were in possession of the Tower, and that the city had expressed a

general approbation of the confederacy againſt him, reſolved to ſubmit to his fate, without giving the new council any farther trouble.

Hereupon, there was ſent to London a warrant under the king's hand, for any two of the lords of the council that were there, to come to Windſor with twenty ſervants each, who had the king's faith for their ſafety in coming and going: at the ſame time Cranmer, Paget and Smith, wrote to them, to end the matter peaceably, and not follow cruel council, nor ſuffer themſelves to be miſled by thoſe who meant otherwiſe than they profeſſed, of which they knew more than they would then mention. This ſeemed to be levelled at the earl of Southampton. On the 9th of October, 1549, the council at London was increaſed by the acceſſion of lord Ruſſel, lord Wentworth, ſir Anthony Brown, Sir Anthony Wingfield, and ſir John Baker, the ſpeaker of the houſe of commons. For thoſe who had been for a while attached to the protector, ſeeing he was reſolved to ſubmit, came and united themſelves to the prevailing party; ſo that they were in all two and twenty: and the protector was ſo weak, as to write a letter to the earl of Warwick, couched in ſuch humiliating terms of complaint, expoſtulation and intreaty, that his enemies plainly perceived they had gained their point, and they reſolved to ſhew him no mercy: for they inſtantly publiſhed a proclamation, ſigned by ſeventeen perſons, either for nobility, or authority of office well regarded, "aſcribing all the national diſgraces abroad, and the inteſtine diviſions at home, to the evil government of the duke, and proteſting that his adminiſtration threatened worſe dangers. They deſired, and in the king's name, charged all his ſubjects not to obey any precepts, licences, or proclamations, whereunto the protector's hand ſhould be ſet, albeit he ſhould

abuſe the king's hand and ſeal unto them, but to quit themſelves, upon ſuch proclamation, as ſhould proceed from the body of the council." *Hayward*, p. 229.

Of all the privy-counſellors, only the archbiſhop of Canterbury and Paget ſtaid with the king, who ſeeing the impoſſibility of withſtanding the oppoſite party, had adviſed the king and the duke to give the council the ſatisfaction they required. The king conſenting to it, the counſellors at London had notice of it by an expreſs. As they had foreſeen that the duke would be obliged to yield, they ſent deputies to Windſor with a charge, to ſee that he did not withdraw, and that ſome of his confidents ſhould be put under an arreſt. On the 12th of October, the chief privy-counſellors, enemies of the duke, waited on the king, who received them graciouſly, and aſſured them, that he took all they had done in good part. Next day they ſat in council, the king being preſent; when Somerſet was formally deprived of the protectorſhip, and all other public offices, and was ordered into confinement in Beauchamp tower, within Windſor caſtle. Then the lords appointed ſeven of the lords of the council, and four knights, to attend the king's perſon by rotation; and having brought his majeſty to Hampton-court, the duke of Somerſet was ſoon after eſcorted to London, riding through that city between the earls of Southampton and Huntingdon, who delivered him to the ſheriffs, by whom he was carried to the Tower, by virtue of a warrant to them, from the king and his new council.

A rumour having been propagated about this time, that the confederate lords had deſigns upon the king's life, and meant to change the form of government to an ariſtocracy, it was judged expedient that their beloved prince ſhould appear to the people

people in public. Accordingly he rode from Hampton-court to his palace in Southwark (then called Suffolk place) where he dined; and in the afternoon, he rode in great ſtate, attended by the principal lords of the confederacy, through the city to Weſtminſter; whereat the people were ſo exceedingly rejoiced, as the king reigned in the hearts of all perſons, however differing in religion, that they rent the air with loud acclamations, and ſeemed to have entirely forgotten their favourite, the late protector.

On the ſecond of January, 1550, a bill of attainder was carried into the houſe of lords againſt the duke, with a confeſſion ſigned by his own hand. But as ſome of the lords ſuſpected that this confeſſion had been extorted from him, and urged, that it was an ill precedent to paſs acts upon ſuch papers, without examining the party, whether he had ſubſcribed them free and uncompelled; the houſe ſent four temporal lords, and four biſhops, to examine him concerning it. The next day, the biſhop of Coventry and Lichfield made the report, that he thanked them for that kind meſſage; but, that he had freely ſubſcribed the confeſſion which lay before them; that he had made it on his knees before the king and council, and had ſigned it on the thirteenth of December. He proteſted that his offences had flowed from raſhneſs and indiſcretion rather than malice, and that he had no treaſonable deſign againſt the king or his realms. Whereupon, he was fined by act of parliament in two thouſand pounds a year in land, with the forfeiture to the king of all his goods, and the loſs of all his places. But he was ſet at liberty, on the ſixth of February, giving a bond of ten thouſand pounds for his good behaviour, with a reſtriction, that he ſhould ſtay at the king's houſe at Sheen, or his own of Lion,

and

and ſhould not go four miles from them, nor come to the king or council, unleſs ſent for. On the 16th of the ſame month, he received his pardon, and, after that, behaved with ſo much humility, that he was, on the 10th of April following, reſtored to favour by the king, and ſworn of the privy-council; and the ſtorm paſſed over more gently than he expected. He forfeited, however, in a great meaſure, the eſteem he had acquired among the people, who, not diving into the reaſons of his conduct, could not help thinking him guilty, ſince he had confeſſed all: but the king, who had a quick judgement, ſaw through the deſigns of his enemies; but though he privately eſteemed him, his own authority was not ſufficient to ſcreen him from their determined vengeance.

But the affection the king ſtill bare to his uncle, being obſerved by the crafty earl of Warwick, he made a ſemblance of being reconciled to the duke of Somerſet, and the more effectually to deceive the public, his eldeſt ſon, the lord viſcount Liſle, was married to lady Ann Seymour, daughter to the duke, on June 17, 1550; the king being preſent at the ſolemnity, and expreſſing the higheſt ſatisfaction at this alliance.

The Popiſh party formed great expectations from the diſgrace of the duke of Somerſet, but it was ſoon found that his ſucceſſor in power, the earl of Warwick, had no particular attachment to any religion, yet was moſt inclined to the Reformation, becauſe he ſaw the king was zealous in promoting it. He therefore abandoned the Roman catholic intereſt, by which he had been ſupported; and this gave the duke of Somerſet and his friends a fair proſpect of undermining him; and it is certain, that from the time Warwick became prime miniſter, Somerſet was conſtantly forming private ſchemes to recover his loſt dignity, and that his

his antagoniſt, wiſhing for a favourable opportunity to ſacrifice ſo dangerous a rival, employed ſpies to watch all his motions: and as the conteſt was very unequal between them, Warwick having all the qualities of a deep politician, and Somerſet, a free, open, unguarded, communicative diſpoſition, it is no wonder that he was ſo ſoon betrayed by his perfidious confidents, who were ſecretly bribed by Warwick.

By one of theſe, his ruin was accompliſhed. For Warwick having by degrees alienated the young king's affection from his uncle, and gained an aſcendancy over him by his ſkilful management of public affairs, began to throw off the maſk, and to treat the duke with contempt and ill uſage, that he might thereby excite him to ſome act of deſperation, which might juſtify putting him to death. The unguarded Somerſet upon this, broke out into threatening expreſſions, and it is ſaid, had thoughts of aſſaſſinating the new miniſter, now duke of Northumberland. The chief informer againſt Somerſet was Sir Thomas Palmer, who accuſed him firſt privately to the king, and afterwards to the council, of having formed a deſign to raiſe an inſurrection in the North; to attack the *gens d'armes*, the king's guard, on a muſter-day; to ſecure the Tower; and to excite a rebellion in London: to this was added, a plot to murder the duke of Northumberland, the marquis of Northampton, and the earl of Pembroke; and this laſt charge was ſupported likewiſe by the evidence of one Crane and his wife, confidential dependants on the ducheſs of Somerſet, and Crane in particular depoſed, that the plot was to be carried into execution, at a banquet to be given by lord Paget to the devoted lords. Upon theſe ſuſpicions of treaſon and felony, the king too readily conſented, that his uncle

uncle ſhould be brought to a trial; and very ſoon after, a circumſtance which ought to have been conſtrued in his favour, was made uſe of to confirm the accuſations againſt him.

Somerſet, yielding too much to the fear of a ſudden attempt upon his own life, had been perſuaded to wear a coat of mail next his ſhirt, and going thus dreſſed to the council-board on the 16th of October, 1551, his boſom, by inattention, being open, the armour was diſcovered, upon which he was forthwith apprehended as intending the death of ſome counſellor, and the duke of Northumberland, in particular, taxed him ſo vehemently, that he was ordered to the Tower, and attachments were iſſued againſt all his pretended aſſociates. In conſequence of theſe proceedings, ſome of the accuſed fled upon the firſt ſummons, particularly Sir Thomas Vane, who was taken in a ſtable at Lambeth, hid under the ſtraw, and this fooliſh conduct ſeemed to confirm the truth of the plot. The next day the ducheſs of Somerſet, lord Grey of Wilton, Crane and his wife, and the chief waiting-woman belonging to the ducheſs were committed to the Tower, at which the people exceedingly rejoiced, believing if there was any real miſchief on foot, the ducheſs muſt have been the chief contriver and inſtrument of it. Sir Thomas Holdcroft, Sir Miles Partridge, Sir Michael Stanhope, John and David Seymour, Wingfield, Banniſter and Vaughan were likewiſe committed to different priſons; but Sir Thomas Palmer, Sir Ralph Arundel, Hammond Nudigate, and Sir Thomas Vane, (who turned evidence) were treated with great tenderneſs, and held in cuſtody in apartments at court, to be produced as the principal accuſers.

Upon the farther examination of Crane, the earl of Arundel, lord Paget, and two of the earl

of

of Arundel's ſervants were alſo taken into cuſtody: and in order to prejudice the public againſt the duke of Somerſet, the lord chancellor made an elaborate ſpeech in the ſtar-chamber, on the accuſations againſt the duke, giving his opinion in public, againſt every rule of equity, previous to the trial, that they were true; and the foreign miniſters were inſtructed to write to their reſpective courts, that he was guilty, as implicitly as if he had already been convicted.

Upon theſe extravagant accuſations, moſt hiſtorians have founded their accounts of this event. Dr. Burnet is the only one, whom we can depend upon with regard to the evidence againſt the duke: according to him, it appeared, that he had made a party to get himſelf declared protector in the next parliament; which the earl of Rutland did poſitively affirm, and the duke's anſwer ſerved only to confirm it to be true. But though this might well inflame his enemies, yet it was no crime. As to the means which the duke of Somerſet intended to make uſe of, in order to attain his ends, it is highly probable he had deviſed ſeveral, but had yet fixed upon none, except that, perhaps, of ſecuring the duke of Northumberland's perſon.

On the firſt of December the duke was brought to his trial; the marquis of Wincheſter was lord high ſteward, the peers who ſat in judgement being twenty-ſeven in number. The crimes with which he was charged, were caſt into five ſeveral indictments, as it appears from the king's journal; but whether indictments or articles is not clear. That he had deſigned to have ſeized on the king's perſon, and ſo to have governed all his affairs; that he intended to have attacked the *gens d'armes* on a muſter day; that he, with one hundred others, intended to kill the earl of Warwick,

wick, then duke of Northumberland; and that he had designed to raise an insurrection in the North, and in the city of London.

It was objected on the trial, that three peers, Northumberland, Northampton, and Pembroke, against the first of whom it was pretended in the indictment, that he had conspired, should sit as his judges: for though, by the law, no peer can be challenged in a trial, yet it was ever held, that a man cannot be judge in his own cause, but the objection was over-ruled; and, what is very extraordinary, the lord-chancellor, though then a peer, was left out of the number; but it seems probable, that the reconciliation between him and the duke of Somerset was then suspected, and that he was therefore excluded from the number of his judges.

The duke of Somerset, though little acquainted with the laws of the land, did not desire counsel to plead or assist him in point of law, but only answered himself to matters of fact. He began his defence, by requesting, that no advantage might be taken against him, for any idle word, or passionate expression, that might at any time have escaped him. He protested, he never intended to have raised the northern parts; but had only, upon some reports, sent to Sir William Herbert, to intreat him to be his friend: that he had never formed a resolution to kill the duke of Northumberland, or any other person, but had only talked of it, without any intention of doing it: that, for the design of destroying the guards, it was ridiculous to think, that he, with a small troop, could destroy so strong a body of men, consisting of nine hundred; in which, though he had succeeded, it could have signified nothing: that he never intended to have raised any disturbances in London, but had always looked upon it as a place in which he

he was in perfect security: that his having men about him in Greenwich was with no ill design, since he did no mischief with them, even when it was in his own power; but, upon his attachment, surrendered, without making any resistance. He likewise objected many things against the witnesses, and desired they might be brought face to face. He spoke much against Sir Thomas Palmer, the chief witness, in particular. But the witnesses were not brought, only their examinations were read. Upon this, the king's counsel pleaded against him, that to levy war was certainly treason: that, to assemble men, with an intention to kil privy-counsellors, was also treason: that to have men about him to resist the attachment, was felony; and, to assault the lords, or contrive their deaths, was felony.

When the peers withdrew, it seems, the proofs about his design of raising the north, or the city, or of killing the guards, did not satisfy them. For all these had been, without all question, treasonable; but they held to the point of conspiring to kill the duke of Northumberland. The duke of Suffolk was of opinion, that no contention among private subjects, should be on any account screwed up, to be high treason. The duke of Northumberland said, he would never consent that any practice against him should be reputed treason. After a great difference of opinion, they all acquitted him of treason; but the greater number found him guilty of felony; in which sentence they proceeded upon a statute made in the reign of Henry VII. which declared it felony for inferior persons to intend to take away the life of a privy-counsellor, but lords were therein expressedly excepted; and therefore, as Hayward observes, Somerset, being both a peer and privy-counsellor, the statute could not affect him.

The

The duke behaved, during the whole time of his trial, with great temper and patience: when ſentence was given, he thanked the lords for their attention, and aſked pardon of Northumberland, Northampton, and Pembroke, for his ill intentions againſt them; and made ſuit for his life, in pity to his wife, children, and ſervants, and in regard of payment of his debts.

He was then remanded to the Tower, and becauſe he was acquitted of treaſon, the axe was not openly carried, whereupon the people, ſuppoſing that he was altogether acquitted, ſhouted half a dozen times ſo loud, that they were heard beyond Charing-Croſs. *Hayward*, p. 330.

It is highly probable, that the duke relied on a pardon, having before experienced the king's clemency; but his popularity ſerved only to increaſe the fears of the court, and great pains had been taken to prepoſſeſs the king againſt him; ſo that young Edward, who abhorred the crimes he believed him guilty of, was very far from any thoughts of granting him a pardon; and, in order to prevent it effectually, the king was told, that the duke had confeſſed in the Tower, that he had hired one Bartuile to kill ſome of the lords of the council, which Bartuile was ſaid to have acknowledged.

At the ſame time the courtiers artfully "entertained the king with ſtately maſks, tilts, barriers, and much other variety of mirth," to divert his thoughts from his condemned uncle; and the duke's relations and friends were prevented from approaching the royal preſence. And at length he conſented to his death; whereupon an order was ſent for beheading the duke of Somerſet on the 22d of January, 1552, on which day he was brought to the place of execution on Tower-hill. His whole deportment was very compoſed,

poſed, and no way changed from what it had ordinarily been. He firſt kneeled down, and prayed, and then ſpake to the people in theſe words: "Dearly beloved friends, I am brought here to ſuffer death, albeit that I never offended againſt the king, neither by word or deed; and have always been as faithful and true to this realm, as any man hath been. But, for ſo much as I am by law condemned to die, I do acknowledge myſelf, as well as others, to be ſubject thereto: wherefore, to teſtify my obedience, which I owe unto the laws, I am come hither to ſuffer death, whereunto I willingly offer myſelf, with moſt hearty thanks to God, that hath given me this time of repentance, who might, through ſudden death, have taken away my life, that neither I ſhould have acknowledged him, nor myſelf. Moreover, there is yet ſomewhat that I muſt put you in mind of, as touching Chriſtian religion, which, ſo long as I was in authority, I always diligently ſet forth, and furthered to my power; neither repent I of my doings, but rejoice therein, ſince that now the ſtate of Chriſtian religion cometh moſt near unto the form and order of the primitive church, which thing I eſteem as a great benefit given of God, both to you and me; moſt heartily exhorting you all, that this, which is purely ſet forth to you, you will, with like thankfulneſs, accept and embrace, and ſet out the ſame in your living; which thing, if you do not, without doubt, greater miſchief and calamity will follow."

When he had gone ſo far, certain perſons of a hamlet near, who had been warned by the lieutenant to attend that morning at ſeven of the clock, coming after their hour, through the Poſtern, and perceiving the priſoner to be mounted upon the ſcaffold, began to run and to call their fellows

fellows to come away: the ſuddenneſs of their coming, the haſte they made, the weapons they carried; but eſpecially the words *come away*, moved many of the neareſt to the ſcaffold, to ſurmiſe that a power was come to reſcue the duke, whereupon many cried with a high voice, *away, away.* The cry of theſe, and the coming on of the others, caſt amazement upon all, ſo much the more terrible, as no man knew what he feared, or wherefore, every man conceiving that which his aſtoniſhed fancy did caſt in his mind; ſome imagined that it thundered; others, that it was an earthquake; others, that the powder in the armory had taken fire; others, that troops of horſemen approached; in which medley of conceits, they bore down one another, and joſtled many into the Tower ditch; and long it was before the vain tumult could be appeaſed; and when it was, another ſucceeded; for Sir Anthony Brown came riding towards the ſcaffold, and they all hoped he had brought a pardon; upon which there was a general ſhouting, "Pardon, pardon; God ſave the king;" many throwing up their caps; by which the duke might well perceive how dear he was to the people. But, as ſoon as theſe diſorders were over, he made a ſign to them with his hand to compoſe themſelves, and then went on in his ſpeech thus:

"Dearly beloved friends, there is no ſuch matter here in hand, as you vainly hope or believe. It ſeemeth thus good unto Almighty God, whoſe ordinance it is meet and neceſſary that we all be obedient to. Wherefore I pray you all to be quiet, and to be contented with my death, which I am moſt willing to ſuffer: and let us now join in prayer to the Lord, for the preſervation of the king's majeſty, unto whom, hitherto, I have always ſhewed myſelf a moſt faithful and firm ſub-

ject. I have always been most diligent about his majesty, in his affairs both at home and abroad; and no less diligent in seeking the common commodity of the whole realm;" (upon this the people cried out, it was most true) "unto whose majesty I wish continual health, with all felicity, and all prosperous success. Moreover, I do wish unto all his counsellors, the grace and favour of God, whereby they may rule, in all things uprightly with justice; unto whom I exhort you all, in the Lord, to shew yourselves obedient, as it is your bounden duty, under the pain of condemnation; and also most profitable for the preservation and safeguard of the king's majesty. Moreover, for as much as heretofore I have had affairs with divers men, and hard it is to please every man; therefore, if there have been any that have been offended or injured by me, I most humbly require and ask him forgiveness; but more especially, I ask forgiveness of Almighty God, whom, throughout all my life, I have most grievously offended; and all other, whatsoever they be, that have offended me, I do, with my whole heart, forgive them."

Then he desired them to be quiet, lest their tumults might trouble him, and said, "Albeit the spirit be willing and ready, the flesh is frail and wavering; and, through your quietness, I shall be much more quiet. Moreover, I desire you all to bear me witness, that I die here in the faith of Jesus Christ, desiring you to help me with your prayers, that I may persevere constant in the same to my life's end."

Then Dr. Cox, who was with him on the scaffold, put a paper into his hand, which was a prayer he had prepared for him. He read it on his knees, then he took leave of all about him, and undressed himself to be fitted for the axe. In

all

all which there appeared no change in him, only his face was a little ruddier than ordinary. He continued calling, "Lord Jesus save me," till the executioner severed his head from his body.

The duke of Somerset was possessed of great virtues; he was eminent for piety; humble, and affable in his greatness; sincere and candid in all his transactions. He was a better general than a statesman; yet had been often successful in his undertakings; was always careful of the poor and the oppressed; and, in a word, had as many virtues, and as few faults, as most great men, who have been as unexpectedly advanced to the highest pinnacle of power.

The people were much affected at this execution; many dipped handkerchiefs in his blood to preserve it in remembrance of him; and it is certain, that they never forgave the duke of Northumberland, though they stifled their resentment at the time. Of this we shall be convinced in the subsequent pages.

*** *Authorities.* Baker's Chronicle. Sir John Hayward's Life of Edward VI. Biog. Britan. Burnet's History of the Reformation, &c.

The LIFE of

JOHN DUDLEY,

DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND.

(A. D. 1502, to 1553.)

JOHN DUDLEY was the ſon of the infamous Edmund Dudley, Eſq. an able, but corrupt lawyer, who was ſpeaker of the houſe of commons in 1504, and a privy counſellor, at which period the avarice of Henry VII. was inſatiable, and this venal lawyer, in conjunction with Sir Richard Empſon, chief juſtice of the king's-bench, inſtead of diſcountenancing the meaneſt of all paſſions that can be harboured in a royal breaſt, invented various illegal methods of extorting money from the people, to fill the king's coffers, themſelves receiving poundage for the ſums thus baſely acquired. Upon the acceſſion of Henry VIII. the people preſented petitions, and cried aloud to the king, whenever he appeared in public, for juſtice againſt theſe public robbers, and their inferior agents, and the latter being apprehended and ſet in the pillory, were ſtoned to death by the enraged populace, nor would they reſt ſatisfied till Empſon and Dudley were indicted, convicted of high treaſon, and beheaded, in 1510. The detail of their cruelties, extortions, and oppreſſions, the

the reader will find at large in Lord Bacon's hiſtory of Henry VII.

Young Dudley was born in 1502, and in the ninth year of his age, it being repreſented to the king, that he was deſcended from an ancient and honourable family, who, his father excepted, had done honourable ſervice to the ſtate, he was reſtored in blood, but no ſtatute is to be found for reverſing the attainder of his father, as recorded by moſt hiſtorians, nor could he inherit his father's opulent fortune, his perſonal eſtate having been confiſcated to the king's uſe, who never made any reſtitution of money, not even of the ſums extorted by his father, and as to the real eſtates, they were beſtowed on his favourites. But, about the year 1523, having received an education ſuitable to his rank, he was introduced to court by his mother, now married again, by the king's conſent, to Henry Plantagenet, who in her right, (ſhe being the daughter and heireſs of John Grey, Viſcount L'Iſle) was created Viſcount L'Iſle.

Dudley's advantageous perſonal figure and great accompliſhments ſoon recommended him to the notice of his ſovereign, who nominated him to attend the king's favourite, Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk, in his expedition to France, where his gallant behaviour not only intitled him to the favour of his noble general, but procured him likewiſe the honour of knighthood. It is natural to imagine, that, upon his return, he was very well received at court, having many relations who had great influence there; but, it ſeems, he relied chiefly on his own abilities, and very wiſely attached himſelf to the king's firſt miniſter, cardinal Wolſey, whom he accompanied in his expedition to France, in 1527; and ſoon after he was made maſter of the armory in the Tower. His hopes of preferment at court, however, did not hinder

him from attending to his concerns in the country, where he was very aſſiduous in improving his intereſt with the gentry, and, in 1536, was nominated ſheriff of Staffordſhire; where he lived hoſpitably, and made himſelf popular among his neighbours.

During Wolſey's adminiſtration Sir John Dudley aſſiduouſly paid his court to him; but as ſoon as he found Cromwell was gaining the aſcendant, his political genius directed him to attach himſelf to the new favourite, by whom he was appointed maſter of the horſe to the Princeſs Anne of Cleves, on her arrival in England. On the firſt of May, 1539, he was the firſt of the challengers in the triumphant tournament held at Weſtminſter, in which he appeared with great magnificence. This tournament had been proclaimed in France, Flanders, Scotland, and Spain, for all ſtrangers to try their proweſs againſt the Engliſh challengers, who were Sir John Dudley, Sir Thomas Seymour, Sir Thomas Poynings, Sir George Carew, knights; Anthony Kingſton, and Richard Cromwell, eſquires. Theſe challengers came into the liſts richly dreſſed, preceded by a band of knights and gentlemen, cloathed in white velvet. The firſt day there were forty-ſix defendants, amongſt whom were the earls of Surrey, Lord William Howard, Lord Clinton, and Lord Cromwell, ſon to the prime miniſter, then earl of Eſſex. Sir John Dudley, by ſome miſchance of his horſe, had the misfortune to be overthrown by one Mr. Breme; however he mounted again, and performed very gallantly. After this was over, the challengers rode in ſtate to Durham-houſe, where they entertained the king, the new queen, and the court. On the ſecond day, Anthony Kingſton and Richard Cromwell were made knights. On the third, the challengers fought on horſeback with ſwords,

againſt

againſt twenty-nine defendants; ſir John Dudley and the earl of Surrey running firſt with equal advantage. On the fifth day of May they fought on foot at the barriers againſt thirty defendants. In the courſe of theſe military diverſions, the challengers, at a vaſt expence, entertained both houſes of parliament, the lord mayor, aldermen, and their wives, and all the perſons of diſtinction then in town; as a reward for which, the king gave to each of them a houſe and an hundred marks a year for ever, out of the revenues of the knights of Rhodes which had been given to his majeſty by the parliament then ſitting.

The fall of the earl of Eſſex did not in the leaſt affect the fortune of Sir John Dudley: who was ſo complete a courtier, that while he flattered the miniſters, he took care to pay the higheſt deference to the will of his ſovereign, and thus preſerved his credit at court, amidſt all the changes of men and meaſures.

In 1542, upon the death of his mother's ſecond huſband, he was created Viſcount L'Iſle; and at the next feſtival of St. George, he was alſo elected knight of the garter. But this was ſoon after followed by a much ſtronger token of eſteem and confidence; for the king, conſidering his prudence, his courage, and his activity, as well as the occaſion he had, and was likely to have, for a man of ſuch conſequence in that office, conſtituted him lord high admiral of England, for life.

In 1543, he commanded a fleet of two hundred ſail, with which he invaded Scotland, and in conjunction with the earl of Hertford, the commander in chief, took Edinburgh, being the firſt man who entered the gates. He next embarked for France, and on the 28th of July, of the ſame year, appeared before Boulogne, then beſieged by king Henry VIII. in perſon, and, by his great diligence

and courage, facilitated very much the taking of the place, of which the king made him governor, with the title of his lieutenant-general.

Soon after the king had embarked for England, the dauphin advanced with an army of 50,000 men, and attempted to recover Boulogne by ſurpriſe; but the lord admiral made a vigorous defence, and repulſed the French, who loſt 800 of their beſt troops in the attack. They did not, however, raiſe the ſiege till the month of February, 1544, when the lord admiral, with a ſmall body of horſe and foot, made a ſucceſsful ſally, took twelve pieces of cannon, and obliged the French forces, though greatly ſuperior in number, to make a final and precipitate retreat.

Francis I. being greatly exaſperated at the loſs of Boulogne, contracted with the Italian ſtates for a number of veſſels, and having formed a fleet of two hundred ſail, beſides gallies, he gave inſtructions to Annebault, high admiral of France, not only to recover Boulogne, but to invade the Engliſh coaſts. But lord L'Iſle, upon his firſt appearance before St. Helens, attacked him, with only ſixty ſail, and it is ſaid, that the French had particular orders to take the admiral, on which account, no leſs than eighteen of their ſhips attacked the admiral's, who defended himſelf ſo well, that they were obliged to retire, and the whole fleet ſoon followed. In a ſhort time after this, the Engliſh fleet being reinforced, and having taken ſome troops on board, a general engagement enſued, which laſted two hours, when night ſeparating the two fleets, the French took ſhelter in Havre de Grace, and thus ended their expedition. But the Engliſh admiral made a deſcent on the coaſt of France, burnt the town and abbey of Treport in Normandy, with thirty ſail of ſhips in the

the harbour, and then returned to England, with the loſs of only fourteen men.

A treaty of peace having been concluded with France in 1546, the lord admiral was appointed one of the commiſſioners, to take the oath of Francis I. for the due obſervance of the treaty. Tonſtal, biſhop of Durham, and Wotton, dean of Canterbury, were joined with him in this embaſſy; and in the ſame year he was put into a commiſſion, granted to ſeveral perſons of the firſt rank, for ſettling the accounts of the army. This was the laſt public ſervice he performed in the reign of Henry VIII. who, for his eminent ſervices, beſtowed on him ſome conſiderable grants of church-lands, and at his death not only made him one of his ſixteen executors, who were to be joint regents of the kingdom during the minority of Edward VI. but added to this honour, a legacy of five hundred pounds; a great ſum in thoſe days.

The reader will remember, by what means Somerſet acquired the ſole regency of the kingdom, and he will not be ſurpriſed at the enmity which lord L'Iſle bore to the protector, when he is informed, that the important and moſt honourable office of high admiral was taken from him (though in the language of courts, he is ſaid to have reſigned it) and given to Sir Thomas Seymour, the protector's brother. To compenſate in ſome meaſure, for this impolitic and unjuſt ſtep, lord L'Iſle was created earl of Warwick, and made great chamberlain of England, on the ſame day that Sir Thomas Seymour was conſtituted high admiral, being the 17th of February, 1547, and not three weeks after the death of his late royal maſter, ſo precipitately did Somerſet lay the foundation of his own ruin: for the diſcontent of the earl of Warwick was apparent at this time; and

in the farther view of repairing the injury, he had conſiderable grants from the crown, particularly Warwick caſtle and manor: but theſe emoluments could not bribe his boundleſs ambition.

Nor did he long wait for an opportunity to convince the nation, that his military talents, as well as his politieal abilities, were ſuperior to thoſe of the protector. In the life of Somerſet, we have related the cauſe and iſſue of the expedition to Scotland; and it muſt here be confeſſed, that the earl of Warwick, if he had been firſt, inſtead of ſecond in command, would have puſhed the war to a glorious concluſion. As it was, his conduct was univerſally commended, and all the blame fell upon Somerſet.

When the earl of Warwick returned to London from Scotland, he found the nobility, and perſons of rank about the court, divided into two factions, occaſioned by the quarrels between the protector and his brother; and with true Machiavelian policy, he widened the breach between them, at the ſame time, that he formed a third party, who were to aſſiſt him in accompliſhing the ruin of both. With this view finding that Sudley had raſhly proceeded to overt acts of treaſon, he warmly urged the neceſſity of his being attainted in parliament, and after conviction, he continually preſſed his brother to conſent to his execution. No greater proof can be given of Somerſet's deficiency in politics, and the knowledge of mankind, than his taking the advice of ſo intereſted a perſon as Warwick, who had never loſt ſight of the office of high admiral, in which he was re-inſtated, not long after the execution of the admiral, when he had accompliſhed the protector's firſt diſgrace.

The inſurrections which happened throughout England, in the year 1549, on account of the inclo-

ſures

inclosures, have been already noticed in the life of the protector, and an account given of their suppression, except that of Norfolk, which was reserved for this place, because the earl of Warwick was ordered to march against the Norfolk rebels, and the event of this expedition not only added to his military reputation, but shews how high he stood in the esteem of the people at that time. The number of the rebels amounted to 16000 men, against whom the earl of Warwick was sent, after their reduction had been in vain attempted by the marquis of Northampton, and lord Sheffield, (the latter of whom was slain by them,) to quell this formidable insurrection, with 6000 foot, and 1500 horse.

It was not till after a general battle, that Warwick got possession of Norwich. Their leader, Robert Ket, a tanner, having taught the rebels some discipline, they drew up in excellent order, and fought with great bravery; and though they had upwards of 2000 killed in the action, they resolutely intrenched themselves, and prepared for a second. The earl, with great humanity, unwilling to shed their blood, sent a herald to offer them a pardon, if they would deliver up their leaders; but this they refused, telling the herald, that they expected to die, but that they rather chose to fall in the field than to be deluded by deceitful promises to surrender, and then be put to death like dogs. Warwick, upon receiving this answer, prepared for the onset; but recollecting that they seemed to mistrust the herald, he sent to know if they would accept the pardon, in case he came to them in person, and assured them of it. To which they answered, "That he was a nobleman of such honour and generosity, that, if they might have this assurance from his own mouth, they were willing to submit." The earl accordingly

went in amongſt them; upon which they threw down their arms. Ket was taken the next day, and was hanged ſome time after at Norwich caſtle; and nine of his principal followers were likewiſe hanged on the boughs of the Oak of Reformation, as they had ſtyled it.

Fluſhed with ſucceſs, Warwick now began his aſſociation, with the confederated lords, who finding him an enterpriſing man, a great general, an expert politician, and in favour with the people, and knowing his ſecret hatred to the protector, they reſolved to make him their chief inſtrument in reducing the duke's power; but they did not conceive at this time, that Warwick meant to compaſs his death.

The intrigues of the earl of Warwick from this period, to the death of the duke of Somerſet, have been ſo amply ſet forth in the memoirs of that unfortunate nobleman, that we ſhall touch but ſlightly on the moſt important national tranſactions at this time.

The peace with France, which had been rejected, when the protector propoſed it, was concluded, in April 1550, on the following conditions. Boulogne was to be reſtored to France, but the French king Henry II. ſtipulated to pay the king of England, in conſideration thereof, and of the tribute in arrear from France, the ſum of 400,000 crowns; and it was agreed, that this treaty ſhould not prejudice the claim of England, either to France, or Scotland.

Soon after this peace, the duke of Brunſwick ſent an ambaſſador, to offer his ſervice to the king of England in his wars, with 10,000 men, and to ſolicit the princeſs Mary, the king's eldeſt ſiſter, in marriage. Anſwer was made, that the king's wars were at an end; and as to the propoſed marriage, that the king was in treaty with Portugal on that

ſub-

ſubject; but if that treaty came to no effect, the duke ſhould be favourably heard.

About the ſame time, the emperor ſeemed deſirous of breaking with England; for his ambaſſador boldly demanded of the king that the princeſs Mary ſhould be allowed the free exerciſe of the maſs, claiming in this caſe, the authority of an uncle; but that of her brother and ſovereign being ſuperior, Edward refuſed to comply, and not only aſſiſted the German Proteſtants again with money, but becauſe the emperor publiſhed ſome ſevere edicts againſt them, the Engliſh merchants were injoined to trade, as little as poſſible, to Flanders.

A treaty of commerce was likewiſe concluded with Sweden, highly advantageous to England; for it brought bullion into the kingdom for our native commodities. A conſiderable coinage likewiſe took place at the Mint, but part of this coinage was debaſed.

About the beginning of the year 1551, intelligence was received, that the emperor intended to ſend a fleet to tranſport the princeſs Mary to Antwerp, and a rebellion in Eſſex ſeeming to favour this deſign, ſhe was brought from that county, where ſhe reſided, to London, and endeavours were uſed by the king and the council to bring her over to the Proteſtant religion, but in vain. The emperor now ſent an angry meſſage, threatening war, if ſhe was not allowed the free exerciſe of her religion; whereupon the council determined to ſend Dr. Wotton, Dean of Canterbury, to his Imperial Majeſty, who brought the matter to a ſpeedy concluſion, by declaring that the ſame favour that the king's ſubjects had with reſpect to their religion, (being Proteſtants) in the emperor's dominions, the ſame ſhould the empe-

ror's ſubjects, (being Roman Catholics) enjoy in England; but as for the king's own ſubjects, of whom Mary was one, he had no right to interfere, or to direct the king his maſter in the management of the affairs of his own realm. This declaration put an end to the emperor's threats. And it muſt be confeſſed by the earl of Warwick's enemies, that the vigour which now animated the king's councils with regard to foreign affairs, was chiefly owing to his having the lead in adminiſtration. The king therefore finding he poſſeſſed the qualifications of an able ſtateſman, and ſeeing him, to all appearance, reconciled to his uncle, appointed him, in April, lord ſteward of his houſehold, and earl-marſhal of England; a ſhort time after, he was made lord-warden of the northern marches, and, in October, he was created duke of Northumberland.

By this time, he had made alliances with ſome of the beſt families in England, and advanced his children and friends at court: in particular, Sir Robert Dudley, one of his younger ſons, (afterwards earl of Leiceſter) a man "who for luſt and cruelty," ſays Hayward, "was the monſter of the court, was made one of the ſix ordinary gentlemen of the king's chamber, in Auguſt, and after his coming into place ſo near him, all authors agree, the king enjoyed his health but a little while."

That the duke of Somerſet was not qualified to be prime miniſter, is generally allowed; but the ſecluding him from every reſponſible office was the utmoſt puniſhment for his paſt errors, aimed at by the other counſellors. However, the duke of Northumberland had an ambitious project in agitation, which made him dread the integrity, and remaining influence of his ſovereign's uncle.

But,

But, after his death, having gained an entire aſcendancy over the king, (more latterly, through fear of his power, than inclination) his dangerous plot began to grow ripe for execution; and it was haſtened by the following circumſtance.

The pious, amiable young monarch, notwithſtanding every art was made uſe of to divert him, grew melancholy and penſive. He was often found in tears, and upon the ſlighteſt mention of his late uncle, which could not be avoided in referring to paſt acts of the council, he would ſigh, ſays Hayward, and lament his own unfortunate ſituation, in theſe pathetic terms: "How unfortunate have I been to thoſe of my blood! my mother I ſlew at my birth, and ſince have made away two of her brothers, and haply to ſerve the purpoſes of others againſt myſelf. The protector had done nothing that deſerved death, or if he had, it was very little, and proceeded rather from his wife than himſelf! where then was the good nature of a nephew? where the clemency of a prince? alas! how have I been abuſed? how little was I maſter of my own judgement, that both his death, and the blame thereof, muſt be charged upon me!"

Some writers have aſſerted, that the decline of Edward's health, which commenced about this time, was owing to natural cauſes, and that neither Northumberland, nor his agents, had any hand in haſtening his death; and they aſſign it, as a reaſon, that the duke had no cauſe to ſuſpect the decline of his power, while the king lived. But if we conſider that this nobleman had advanced himſelf by political fraud and cruelty, it ſeems highly probable, that he hourly dreaded his fall, as the king's judgment ripened with his years, and knew, that no other means could prevent the final diſcovery of his vile intrigues, founded on his ambition.

The

The king, therefore, discovering inward remorse for the violent measures into which he had been precipitated through youthful inexperience; Northumberland, who had now the sole direction of public affairs, both foreign and domestic, and whose family and friends were placed about the throne, as a preliminary step to his grand plan for securing permanent power to himself, by raising his family to the throne, hastily concluded a marriage between the lady Jane Grey, eldest daughter to the duke of Suffolk, and his fourth son, lord Guildford Dudley; which was celebrated in the month of May, 1553; and it deserves notice, that the king's illness had increased, with dangerous symptoms, from the month of January.

In the parliament held a little before the king's death, the duke had procured a considerable supply to be granted; and, in the preamble of that act, a direct censure to be inserted of the duke of Somerset's administration. Having thus answered his purposes by this measure, he dissolved that parliament. He then artfully stated to the king, the necessity of setting aside the princess Mary, from the danger the Protestant religion would be in, if she should succeed him. This representation made a deep impression upon the pious young monarch, who readily conceived the fatal consequences to the nation, which would ensue from the restoration of popery, and therefore freely consented to the exclusion of Mary. But as the princess Elizabeth was a protestant, and the king bore a tender affection to her, it has perplexed Burnet, and other historians, to understand how Northumberland could prevail upon him to set her aside. The difficulty, however, is easily resolved, if we attend to the reasons of law and state, brought by the crown lawyers, and the politicians, in Northumberland's

thumberland's intereſt, in ſupport of the expediency of excluding both the princeſſes.

The chief juſtice Montague maintained, that the act of 35 Henry VIII. ſettling the crown upon Mary and Elizabeth, after the demiſe of Edward without iſſue, was rendered null and void, by the act of the 38th of the ſame king, by which the marriages of both their mothers were diſſolved, their divorces confirmed, and their iſſue declared illegitimate, ſo that neither the letters patent, nor the ſubſequent will of the ſaid King, could confer any right of ſucceſſion to the crown, on illegitimate perſons, who were totally diſabled from ſucceeding Edward or any perſon, the act of the 35th limiting the ſucceſſion to legitimate iſſue. Cecil gave it as a reaſon of ſtate, that though Elizabeth was a Proteſtant, ſhe might marry a foreign prince, who might introduce Popery. And theſe arguments moſt aſſuredly prevailed with the king; for they are mentioned in the letters patent, for ſettling the crown on lady Jane Grey. The ſame danger of Popery occaſioned the excluſion of the iſſue of Margaret, queen dowager of Scotland, eldeſt ſiſter of Henry VIII. As to the ducheſs of Suffolk, the next perſon mentioned in Henry's will, ſhe readily entered into Northumberland's views, and yielded her right in favour of her daughter. An inſtrument was accordingly prepared, though not without great oppoſition from ſome of the judges, and being ſigned by the king, on the 21ſt of June, when he was in great debility both of mind and body, it paſſed the great ſeal the next day, and was ſubſcribed by all the privy council, by the biſhops, the major part of the nobility both with reſpect to numbers and conſequence, and by the judges, except Sir James Holles, one of the judges of the common pleas, who conſtantly declared it to be treaſon.

Northum-

Northumberland, having thus accompliſhed his deſign, nothing remained, but that the king ſhould not long ſurvive, leſt the recovery of his own penetrating judgement with his health, and the application of ſounder advice, ſhould overthrow his cunning devices: therefore, ſoon after the inſtrument had been ſubſcribed by the council, by Northumberland's advice, an order of council iſſued, for diſmiſſing his phyſicians, and for putting him into the hands of an ignorant woman, who undertook to reſtore him, in a ſhort time, to his former health. Inſtead of which, after the uſe of her medicines, all the bad ſymptoms increaſed, to the moſt violent degree: he felt a difficulty of ſpeech, and of breathing; his pulſe failed; his legs ſwelled, his colour became livid, and at length he expired, on the 6th of July, 1553, in the 16th year of his age, and 7th of his reign; leaving great reaſon to believe, from the groſs ignorance and meanneſs of the woman employed, that ſhe was the inſtrument of his deſtruction.

The piety of this prince was as exemplary, as his charity was beneficial to the kingdom, which will never be forgotten, while we behold the hoſpitals of St. Bartholomew, St. Thomas, and Bridewell, founded and munificently endowed by him. His learning, his modeſt, yet graceful and ſtately deportment, and laſtly his fine perſon, made him the ſubject of univerſal admiration.

The duke of Northumberland endeavoured to conceal Edward's death for ſome time, with a view of drawing the princeſs Mary to court, and ſuch hopes were given of his recovery, that the people made general rejoicings upon the occaſion, and it was on pretext of comforting the king in his illneſs, that the duke wrote to Mary to viſit him. But it is highly probable ſhe had a ſecret party in the council, and that though they had ſubſcribed

to

to the lady Jane's ſucceſſion, either through fear, or from bribery, they now ſent her private intelligence of the king's death; for when ſhe was within half a day's journey of London, ſhe turned back in haſte to her houſe at *Hovedon*; and the duke then carried his daughter-in-law from Durham-houſe to the Tower, where the royal apartments had been prepared for her, and a canopy of ſtate put up. On the 10th, ſhe was proclaimed in the uſual manner. The council alſo wrote to queen Mary, requiring her ſubmiſſion; but they were ſoon informed, that ſhe had retired into Norfolk, where many of the nobility, and multitudes of people, reſorted to her. It was then reſolved to ſend forces againſt her under the command of the duke of Suffolk; but lady Jane would by no means part with her father; and the council earneſtly preſſed the duke of Northumberland to go in perſon; to which he was little inclined, as doubting their fidelity. He ſignified as much in the ſpeech he made at taking his leave, and was anſwered with the ſtrongeſt aſſurances that men could give.

On the 14th of July, the duke, accompanied by the marquis of Northampton, the lord Grey, and others, marched through Biſhopſgate with two thouſand horſe, and ſix thouſand foot; but, as they rode through Shoreditch, he could not forbear ſaying to the lord Grey, "The people preſs to ſee us, but none ſay, God ſpeed us." His activity and courage, for which he had been ſo famous, ſeemed, from this time, to have deſerted him; for, though he advanced to St. Edmund's-bury, in Suffolk, yet, finding his troops diminiſh, the people little affected to him, and no ſupplies coming from London, though he had wrote to the lords in the moſt preſſing terms, he retired back again to Cambridge.

In

In the mean time, the council thought of nothing but to get out of the Tower, and at laſt effected it, under pretence of going to the earl of Pembroke's houſe at Baynard's caſtle, to give audience to the foreign ambaſſadors. This was on the 19th of the ſame month; and the firſt thing they did when they came there, was, to ſend for the lord-mayor, aldermen, and ſheriffs, whom they accompanied to Cheapſide, and there garter-king-at-arms proclaimed queen Mary. The earl of Arundel, and lord Paget, went the ſame night to pay their duty to her.

The duke of Northumberland had advice of this on the 20th, and, about five in the afternoon, the ſame day, cauſed her to be proclaimed at Cambridge, throwing up his cap, and crying, "God ſave queen Mary!" Northumberland's affected loyalty, however, was of no ſervice to him; for he was arreſted by the queen's command, and on the 18th of Auguſt, brought to his trial, in Weſtminſter-hall, where being found guilty of high treaſon by his peers, he received ſentence of death. The duke's behaviour under his unhappy circumſtances was, to the laſt degree, mean and abject, from the time of his being arreſted. This intrepid hero in the field, who had faced every danger by ſea and land; this aſpiring ſtateſman, who had boldly ventured to compaſs his ends, by the moſt perilous meaſures, who knew that treaſon was at the bottom of all his deſigns, when he met with that fate which his knowledge of hiſtory, and even his own conduct to Somerſet and his friends, muſt have taught him to expect, dreaded the approach of death; and, upon his knees, beſought the earl of Arundel, by whom he was arreſted, to intercede with the queen for his life. A greater proof cannot be given, that conſcious guilt makes cowards and fools of the braveſt

and

and the wiſeſt men; for Arundel was the very man who firſt deſerted his cauſe at the council board, notwithſtanding, at the duke's departure, he was the moſt vehement in his proteſtations of attachment to him. After ſentence, he as fooliſhly ſolicited Gardiner Biſhop of Wincheſter, his ſworn foe, to uſe his intereſt to ſave his life: aſking him if there were no hopes, and declaring, that he would be content to do penance and to live in a mouſe-hole, if he could but live a little longer; and Gardiner tauntingly told him, he wiſhed to God, his grace could have been content with any thing leſs than a kingdom, when he was at liberty and in proſperity: to which he added, a ſerious admonition for him to make his peace with God, and prepare for death.

It has been obſerved, at the cloſe of the life of Somerſet, that the people never forgave the duke of Northumberland; and, it is highly probable that this was the chief cauſe of the cold reception he met with from the citizens of London, when he proclaimed Lady Jane, and when he marched through the city with an army to ſupport her title. For, when he was conducted to the Tower after his condemnation, many reproached him as he paſſed, and a lady expoſing an handkerchief which had been dipped in the blood of the duke of Somerſet, held it near him, and cried out: "Behold the blood of that worthy man, that good uncle, of our late excellent king, which was ſhed by thy malicious practice, doth now revenge itſelf on thee."

The twenty-firſt of Auguſt, 1553, was the day fixed for his execution: when a vaſt concourſe of people aſſembled upon Tower-hill, all the uſual preparations being made, and the executioner ready: but, after waiting ſome hours, the people were ordered to depart. This delay was to afford time

time for his making an open ſhew of the change of his religion, ſince that very day, in the preſence of the mayor and aldermen, as well as ſome of the privy-council, he heard maſs in the Tower. The next day, he was actually brought out to ſuffer death, on the ſame ſcaffold on Tower-hill; where he made a very long ſpeech to the people; of which there remains nothing but what relates to his religion: which he not only profeſſed to be then that of the church of Rome, but that it had been always ſo; taking upon himſelf the odious character of a hypocrite in the ſight of God, as well as a diſſembler with men. It is ſtrongly ſuſpected, that he acted this diſgraceful part, in the hopes of ſaving his life: for it is affirmed, that he had a promiſe of pardon, even if his head was upon the block, if he would recant and hear maſs; and this deception was afterwards practiſed by Mary, to procure recantations from unhappy proteſtants, whom ſhe afterwards conſtantly put to death, in violation of the promiſes made in her name, and by her expreſs order.

Having finiſhed his ſpeech to the people, and his private devotions, the executioner aſked him forgiveneſs, to whom he ſaid, "I forgive thee with all my heart, do thy part without fear." And bowing towards the block, he ſaid, "I have deſerved a thouſand deaths." Then laying his head on the block, it was inſtantly ſevered from his body: he was buried in the Tower, in St. Peter's church, near the body of the duke of Somerſet.

Thus deſervedly fell John Dudley, duke of Northumberland, whoſe virtues were few, but ſuch as accompliſh the ſtateſman and hero; and if they had not been ſullied by the fouleſt crimes, he might have proved one of the ableſt miniſters England had ever ſeen: for he thoroughly underſtood

the

the political and commercial intereſts of his country; and it muſt not be forgotten, that he greatly promoted the latter. During his ſhort adminiſtration, two inſtances are on record, which conſidered in a national light, are an expiation for many of his faults.

The firſt was the diſſolution of the corporation of the merchants of the *Steel-yard* in London, conſiſting of foreigners, chiefly Germans, ſubjects of the Hans-towns, who engroſſed the management of all the foreign commerce of England, all imports and exports being made in the ſhips of this corporation, by which the Engliſh merchant adventurers ſuffered great loſſes, and were expoſed to frauds of all kinds from the officers and other agents of this ſociety. The complaints of the Engliſh being brought before the privy council, by the advice, and under the patronage of the duke of Northumberland, after they had failed of redreſs in the courts of law, owing to the privileges granted by former kings to the corporation, the duke propoſed the diſſolution of the ſociety, which was carried, and it was accordingly diſſolved, the latter end of the year 1552; and, from this time our foreign trade was encouraged in Engliſh bottoms.

The ſecond was, the eſtabliſhment of a Mart at *Southampton*, for our woollen manufactures, which before were tranſported to *Bruges* and *Antwerp*, at a great expence; for beſides the freight in foreign bottoms, the Engliſh were obliged to have agents and factors ſettled in Flanders, to tranſact this buſineſs. But the new regulation of opening a Mart in England, which took place in 1553, produced a moſt advantageous alteration in this valuable branch of our commerce, and was no leſs favourable to the kingdom in general, as it brought numbers of foreigners to viſit this country, ſome of

of whom settled in it, and contributed to the progress, which England made, in arts, manufactures, and commerce, in the age of queen Elizabeth.

*** *Authorities.* Stow's Chronicle. Speed's History of England. Lloyd's State Worthies. Sir John Hayward's Life of Edward VI. Fox's Acts and Monuments, &c. Burnet's History of the Reformation.

The LIFE of

HUGH LATIMER,

BISHOP of WORCESTER.

(With Memoirs of RIDLEY, Bishop of LONDON.)

[A.D. 1455, to 1555.]

HUGH LATIMER was born at Thirkesson or Thurcaston, in Leicestershire, about the year 1475. His father was a reputable yeoman, who had no land of his own, but rented a small farm, on which, in those frugal times, he maintained a large family: six daughters, and a son.

But the best account of this family, is given in one of his Lent sermons, preached before Edward VI. wherein, after exclaiming against the inclosures of common lands, and other oppressions, practised at that time, by the nobility and gentry,

he

he takes notice of the moderation of the landlords a few years before, and of the eaſe and plenty enjoyed by the tenants; as a proof of which, he adds, "That upon a farm of four pounds a year at the utmoſt, his father tilled as much ground as kept half a dozen men; that he had it ſtocked with an hundred ſheep, and thirty cows; that he found the king a man and horſe, himſelf remembering to have buckled on his father's harneſs, when he went to Blackheath; that he gave his daughters five pounds a-piece at marriage; that he lived hoſpitably among his neighbours, and was not backward in his alms to the poor."

The juvenile part of Latimer's life affords nothing worthy our notice; we ſhall therefore introduce him to our readers, at the time when he firſt appeared upon the theatre of the world, and began to act a conſpicuous part. This happened about the year 1500, when having taken the degree of Maſter of Arts, at Chriſt's college in Cambridge, and entered into Prieſt's orders, his zeal for the doctrines of the Romiſh church manifeſted itſelf by violent declamations againſt the German reformers, whoſe opinions began to be propagated in England, and to gain ground. If any profeſſor, ſuſpected of favouring their tenets, read lectures, he attended, and the univerſity in recompence for his zeal, having giving him the office of croſs bearer, he exerciſed ſome authority over the ſcholars, driving them from the ſchools of theſe lecturers.

But fortunately for the church of England, of which he afterwards became an illuſtrious prelate, Mr. Latimer became acquainted with Mr. Thomas Bilney; who having entertained favourable ſentiments of Latimer from his moral character, in which alone there was at that time any ſimilarity between them, conceived an opinion, that by communicating

ing to him the obſervations he had long made on the ſcandalous lives of the monks and the Romiſh clergy, and comparing them with the exemplary conduct of the reformers, he might induce Latimer to think more favourably of their writings and opinions. Thus prepoſſeſſed with the idea of converting him, and having entered into ſome conferences with him on religious ſubjects, Mr. Bilney took proper opportunities, to hint that ſome of the tenets of the Romiſh church, were not conſonant to primitive Chriſtianity; and by degrees he raiſed doubts, and a ſpirit of enquiry in Latimer's mind, who had always acted, though erroneouſly, upon honeſt principles; and in the end, he was fully convinced of the errors of the Romiſh church, which he abandoned, and from this time he became very active in ſupporting and propagating the reformed opinions. He endeavoured with great aſſiduity to make converts, both in town, and in the univerſity; preaching in public, exhorting in private, and every where preſſing the neceſſity of a holy life, in oppoſition to the ſuperſtitious ceremonies, and external acts of devotion, which prevailed in the Romiſh religion.

The firſt remarkable oppoſition that he met with from the Popiſh party, was occaſioned by a courſe of ſermons which he preached during the feſtival of Chriſtmas, before the univerſity, in which he ſpoke his ſentiments concerning the impiety of indulgences, the uncertainty of tradition, and the vanity of works of ſupererogation. He inveighed againſt the multiplicity of ceremonies with which religion was then incumbered, and the pride and uſurpation of the Romiſh hierarchy: but chiefly he dwelt upon the great abuſe of locking up the ſcriptures in an unknown tongue;

giving his reasons without any reserve, why they ought to be put in every one's hand.

Great was the outcry occasioned by these discourses. Mr Latimer was then a preacher of some eminence, and began to display a remarkable address in adapting himself to the capacities of the people. The orthodox clergy observing him thus followed, thought it high time to oppose him openly. This task was undertaken by Dr. Buckenham, prior of the Black Friars, who appeared in the pulpit a few Sundays after, and with great pomp and prolixity, endeavoured to shew the dangerous tendency of Mr. Latimer's opinions: particularly he inveighed against his heretical notion of having the scriptures published in English, laying open the ill effects of such an innovation. "If that heresy, said he, were to prevail, we should soon see an end of every thing useful among us. The ploughman reading, that if he put his hand to the plough, and should happen to look back, he was unfit for the kingdom of God, would soon lay aside his labour: the baker likewise reading, hat a little leaven will corrupt his lump, would give us very insipid bread: the simple man likewise finding himself commanded to pluck out his eyes, in a few years we should have the nation full of blind beggars."

Mr. Latimer could not help listening with secret pleasure to this ingenious reasoning. Perhaps, he had acted as prudently, if he had considered the prior's arguments as unanswerable; but he could not resist the vivacity of his temper, which strongly inclined him to expose this solemn trifler. The whole university met together on the Sunday, when it was known Mr. Latimer would preach. A vein of pleasantry and humour ran through all his words and actions, which, it was imagined, would here have full scope: and the preacher was

not a little conſcious of his own ſuperiority. To complete the ſcene, juſt before the ſermon began, Buckenham himſelf entered the church, with his friar's cowl about his ſhoulders, and ſeated himſelf, with an air of importance, before the pulpit.

Mr. Latimer, with great gravity, recapitulated the learned doctor's arguments, placed them in the ſtrongeſt light, and then rallied them with ſuch a flow of wit, and at the ſame time with ſo much good humour, that, without the appearance of ill-nature, he made his adverſary in the higheſt degree ridiculous. He then, with great addreſs, appealed to the people, deſcanted upon the low eſteem in which their holy guides had always held their underſtanding, expreſſed the utmoſt offence at their being treated with ſuch contempt, and wiſhed his honeſt countrymen might only have the uſe of the ſcriptures till they ſhewed themſelves ſuch abſurd interpreters. He concluded his diſcourſe with a few obſervations upon ſcripture metaphors. A figurative manner of ſpeech, he ſaid, was common in all languages: repreſentations of this kind were in daily uſe, and generally underſtood. "Thus, for inſtance, ſaid he, (addreſſing himſelf to that part of the audience where the prior was ſeated) when we ſee a fox painted, preaching in a friar's hood, nobody imagines that a fox is meant, but that craft and hypocriſy are deſcribed, which are ſo often found diſguiſed in that garb."

But it is probable, that Mr. Latimer thought this levity unbecoming; for when one Venetus, a foreigner, not long after, attacked him again upon the ſame ſubject, and in a manner the moſt ſcurrilous and provoking, we find him uſing a graver ſtrain. He anſwers, like a ſcholar, what is worth anſwering; and, like a man of ſenſe, leaves the abſurd part to confute itſelf. But whether jocoſe or ſerious, his harangues were ſo animated, that they

they ſeldom failed of their intended effect: his raillery ſhut up the prior within his monaſtery, and his ſolid arguments drove Venetus from the univerſity.

The Proteſtant cauſe ſoon acquired great credit at Cambridge by the joint labours of Bilney and Latimer, whoſe lives ſtrictly correſponded with the purity of the doctrines they taught; and no academical cenſures were found ſufficient to deter the ſtudents from following theſe eminent reformers.

Dr. Weſt the dioceſan was applied to, to ſilence Latimer, which he did, after he had heard him preach, though he had expreſſed his approbation of his diſcourſe. He, however, prohibited him from preaching in any of the churches within his dioceſe. But this gave no great check to the reformers; for there happened at that time to be a prior in Cambridge, Dr. Barnes, of the Auſtin Friars, who favoured the principles of the Reformation. His monaſtery was exempt from epiſcopal juriſdiction, and being a great admirer of Mr. Latimer, he boldly licenſed him to preach there. Hither his party followed him; and the late oppoſition having greatly excited the curioſity of the people, the friars chapel was ſoon unable to contain the crowds that attended.

This ſucceſs which Mr. Latimer had thus gained by preaching, he maintained by ſanctity of manners. Nor did Mr. Bilney and he ſatisfy themſelves with acting unexceptionably, but were daily giving inſtances of true piety and benevolence, which malice could not ſcandalize, nor envy miſinterpret. They were always together concerting meaſures for the advancement of true religion; and the place, where they uſed to walk, was long afterwards known by the name of the Heretics hill. Cambridge at the time was full of their

good actions: their charities to the poor, and friendly visits to the sick and unhappy, were common topics of conversation.

At length heavy complaints were sent to the ministry at London, of the surprising increase of heresy, and Latimer was accused as the principal propagator of the new opinions; and cardinal Wolsey, being importuned by Warham, archbishop of Canterbury, and the bishops at court, sent for Latimer to appear before him at York-house, but after some private conversation, he dismissed him courteously, and granted him a special licence, to preach in all parts of England.

Mr. Latimer then returned to Cambridge, but soon after he extended his pious designs of reformation, by preaching in different parts of the kingdom, and he, once or twice, had the honour to preach before Henry VIII. at Windsor, upon which occasions, the king had taken particular notice of him. This encouraged him to write a very bold letter to his majesty, when the royal proclamation was issued, forbidding the use of the bible in English, and other books on religious subjects. From the time that the Reformation was first encouraged in England by private persons, the promoters of it, had continually dispersed among the people, a variety of polemical tracts, and others, exposing the corrupt lives of the clergy, and the monks. These books were printed abroad; and after the reformers took the name of PROTESTANTS, (which they did at the diet held at *Spires* in 1529, from the PROTEST they then and there made against the errors of Popery) they sent them over in great quantities to their brethren in England; and amongst other works, a translation of the new testament: against these the proclamation was levelled. It impowered the bishops to imprison, at pleasure, all persons suspected

of

of having heretical books, till the party had purged himself, or abjured; it likewise authorised the bishop to set an arbitrary fine upon all persons convicted; and it prohibited all appeals from the ecclesiastical courts, and ordered the civil officers on their allegiance, to aid the bishops in the extirpation of heresy. As the cruel bigotry of the clergy rendered this proclamation extremely fatal, some persons having been burnt for reading the bible, and others for teaching their children the Lord's prayer, and the ten commandments, Latimer, with pious fortitude, remonstrated against it in his letter to the king, the scope of which is to point out the evil intentions of the bishops in obtaining the proclamation, to guard the king against the malevolence of those, who insinuated that the reformers were a set of seditious men, who would disturb the peace of the kingdom; and to convince him, that the free use of the scriptures would make the people better, instead of worse subjects, as it had been falsely represented to his majesty; and after vouching for the good characters of the unfortunate persons then in custody, he makes the following nervous, pathetic conclusion:

"Accept, gracious sovereign, without displeasure, what I have written. I thought it my duty to mention these things to your majesty. No personal quarrel, as God shall judge me, have I with any man: I wanted only to induce your majesty to consider well what kind of persons you have about you, and the ends for which they counsel: indeed, great prince, many of them, or they are much slandered, have very private ends. God grant your majesty may see through all the designs of evil men; and be, in all things, equal to the high office with which you are entrusted! But, gracious king, remember yourself; have pity upon

your own ſoul; and think that the day is at hand, when you ſhall give account of your office, and of the blood that hath been ſhed by your ſword. In the which day, that your grace may ſtand ſtedfaſtly, and not be aſhamed, but be clear and ready in your reckoning, and have your pardon ſealed with the blood of our Saviour Chriſt, which only ſerveth at that day, is my daily prayer to him who ſuffered death for our ſins. The ſpirit of God preſerve you!"

With ſuch freedom did this worthy man addreſs his ſovereign; but the influence of the Popiſh party was then ſo great, that his letter produced no effect. But Henry, who, notwithſtanding his vices, had an open, free diſpoſition, and was a great lover of ſincerity in others, thanked him for his well meant advice, and Mr. Latimer's plain, familiar ſtyle, made ſuch an impreſſion upon him, that from this time, it appears the king entertained thoughts of taking him into his ſervice.

Favourable opportunities ſoon offered for recommending Mr. Latimer to the good graces of the king: for in the grand points of the divorce, and of the ſupremacy, he exerted himſelf ſtrenuouſly at Cambridge, in favour of the king's deſigns; eſpecially in the affair of the ſupremacy, joining with Dr. Butts, the king's phyſician, in obtaining the opinions of ſeveral divines and canoniſts in Cambridge, in ſupport of that meaſure. Theſe divines were in the Proteſtant intereſt, and probably Butts would not have ſucceeded in his commiſſion, which was to gain them over, if Latimer had not aſſiſted them. In return for this favour, Dr. Butts took Mr. Latimer with him to court in 1535; and Cromwell, who was riſing into power, and favouring the Reformation, having already conceived a very high opinion of him, very ſoon procured him a benefice.

This

This living was in Wiltshire, whither Mr. Latimer resolved, as soon as possible, to repair, and keep a constant residence. His friend Dr. Butts, surprised at his resolution, did what he could to persuade him from it. He was deserting, he told him, the fairest appearances of making his fortune. But Mr. Latimer was not a man, on whom such arguments had any weight. He left the court, therefore, and entered immediately upon the duties of his parish; hoping to be of some use in the world, by faithfully exerting, in a private station, such abilities as God had given him. His behaviour was suitable to his resolutions. He thoroughly considered the duties of a clergyman; and discharged them in the most conscientious manner. Nor was he satisfied with discharging them in his own parish, but extended his labours throughout the county, where he observed the pastoral care most neglected; having, for this purpose, obtained a general licence from the university of Cambridge.

His preaching, which was in a strain wholly different from the preaching of the times, soon made him acceptable to the people; among whom, in a little time, he established himself in great credit. He was treated likewise very civilly by the neighbouring gentry; and at Bristol, where he often preached, he was countenanced by the magistrates. The reputation he was thus daily gaining, presently alarmed the orthodox clergy in those parts; and their opposition to him appeared first on the following occasion: the mayor of Bristol had appointed him to preach there on Easter-sunday. Public notice had been given, and all people were pleased; when suddenly there came out an order from the bishop of Bristol, prohibiting any one to preach there without his licence. The clergy of the place waited on Mr. Latimer,

informed him of the bishop's order, and, knowing that he had no such licence, "were extremely sorry, that they were, by that means, deprived of the pleasure of hearing an excellent discourse from him." Mr. Latimer received their civility with a smile; for he had been apprised of the affair, and well knew, that these were the very persons who had written to the bishop against him.

Their opposition to him became afterwards more public. Some of them ascended the pulpit in their zeal, and inveighed against him with great indecency of language. Of these the most forward was one Hubberdin, an empty, impudent priest, who could say nothing of his own, but any thing that was put into his mouth. Through this instrument, and others of the same kind, such liberties were taken with Mr. Latimer's character, that he thought it proper, at length, to justify himself; and, accordingly, called upon his calumniators to accuse him publickly before the mayor of Bristol. And, with all men of candour he was justified; for, when that magistrate convened both parties, and put the accusers upon producing legal proof of what they had said, nothing reproachable appeared against him, but the whole accusation was left to rest upon the uncertain evidence of some hear-say information.

His enemies, however, were not thus silenced. The party against him became daily stronger and more inflamed. It consisted, in general, of the country priests of those parts, headed by some divines of more eminence. These persons, after mature deliberation, drew up articles against him, extracted chiefly from his sermons; in which he was charged with speaking lightly of the worship of saints; with saying, that there was no material fire in hell; and, that he had rather be in purgatory, than in Lollard's tower. These articles, in the

the form of an accusation, were laid before Stokesley, bishop of London. This prelate immediately cited Mr. Latimer to appear before him. But Mr. Latimer, instead of obeying the citation, appealed to his own ordinary; thinking himself wholly exempt from the jurisdiction of any other bishop. Stokesley, upon this, making a private cause of it, was determined at any rate to get him in his power. He applied therefore to archbishop Warham, who was prevailed upon to issue a citation from his own court, which Mr. Latimer obeyed. His friends persuaded him to leave the country; but their intreaties were in vain; and he set out for London, though it was in the depth of winter, and he was at this time labouring under a severe fit both of the stone and cholic. But his bodily complaints did not give him so much pain at the thoughts of leaving his parish exposed, where the Popish clergy would not fail to undo, in his absence, what he had hitherto done. When he arrived in London, he found a court of bishops and canonists assembled to receive him; where, instead of being examined, as he expected, about his sermons, a paper was put into his hands, which he was ordered to subscribe. It declared his belief in the doctrine of purgatory; the efficacy of masses for the souls therein; of prayers to the saints; of pilgrimages to their sepulchres and relics; of the perpetual obligation of vows of celibacy, unless dispensed with by the pope; of the papal power to forgive sins; of the worship of images; of the seven sacraments, and other absurd usages of the Romish church.

Mr. Latimer having read over the contents, returned the paper, refusing to sign it. The archbishop, with a frown, desired he would consider what he did. "We intend not," says he, "Mr. Latimer, to be hard upon you; we dismiss you

for the preſent: take a copy of the articles; examine them carefully; and God grant, that, at our next meeting, we may find each other in better temper."

At the next meeting, and at ſeveral ſucceeding ones, the ſame ſcene was acted over again: both ſides continued inflexible. The biſhops, however, being determined, if poſſible, to make him comply, began to treat him with more ſeverity. Of one of theſe examinations he gives us the following account.

"I was brought out," ſays he, "to be examined in a chamber, where I was wont to be examined: but at this time it was ſomewhat altered. For, whereas before there was a fire in the chimney, now the fire was taken away, and an arras hanged over the chimney; and the table ſtood near the chimney's end. There was, among theſe biſhops that examined me, one with whom I have been very familiar, and whom I took for my great friend, an aged man, and he ſat next the table-end. Then, among other queſtions he put forth one, a very ſubtle and crafty one; and, when I ſhould make anſwer, 'I pray you, Mr. Latimer,' ſaid he, 'ſpeak out; I am very thick of hearing, and here be many that ſit far off.' I marvelled at this, that I was bidden to ſpeak out, and began to miſdeem, and gave an ear to the chimney; and there I heard a pen plainly ſcratching behind the cloth. They had appointed one there to write all my anſwers, that I ſhould not ſtart from them. God was my good Lord, and gave me anſwers; I could never elſe have eſcaped them."

Thus the biſhops continued to diſtreſs Mr. Latimer; examining him three times every week, with a view either to draw ſomething from him by captious queſtions, or to teaze him at length into a compliance: and indeed, at length, he was tired out.

out. Accordingly, when he was next ſummoned, inſtead of going himſelf, he ſent a letter to the archbiſhop; in which, with great freedom, he tells him, That the treatment he had of late met with, had fretted him into ſuch a diſorder, as rendered him unfit to attend them that day: that, in the mean time, he could not help taking this opportunity to expoſtulate with his grace, for detaining him ſo long from the diſcharge of his duty: that it ſeemed to him moſt unaccountable, that they, who never preached themſelves, ſhould hinder others: that, as for their examination of him, he really could not imagine what they aimed at; they pretended one thing in the beginning, and another in the progreſs: that, if his ſermons were what gave offence, which, he perſuaded himſelf, were neither contrary to the truth, nor to any canon of the church, he was ready to anſwer whatever might be thought exceptionable in them: that he wiſhed a little more regard might be had to the judgment of the people; and, that a diſtinction might be made between the ordinances of God and man: that, if ſome abuſes in religion did prevail, (as was then commonly ſuppoſed) he thought preaching was the beſt means to diſcountenance them: that he wiſhed all paſtors might be obliged to perform their duty: but that, however, liberty might be given to thoſe who were willing: that, as for the articles propoſed to him, he begged to be excuſed from ſubſcribing them; while he lived he never would abet ſuperſtition: and, that, laſtly, he hoped the archbiſhop would excuſe what he had written; he knew his duty to his ſuperiors, and would practiſe it; but, in that caſe, he thought a ſtronger obligation laid upon him.

Mr. Latimer had indeed a very narrow eſcape, owing entirely to his friends about the king; for this very eccleſiaſtical court had proceeded nearly

in the ſame manner with his worthy friend Mr. Bilney, who after a ſimilar examination, had been purſuaded by Tonſtal, biſhop of Durham, to recant, and bear a faggot upon his ſhoulder, in token of ſubmiſſion. This happened in 1528, and Bilney afterwards feeling great remorſe of conſcience for his recantation, became extremely melancholy, after which he went about preaching the Reformation, and confeſſing the guilt of his abjuration, till at length in the year 1531, he was apprehended by the biſhop of Norwich, and was burnt the ſame year, in purſuance of a writ from the eccleſiaſtical court at London, for his execution, as a relapſed heretic.

What particular effect Latimer's letter produced, we are not informed; but the king, apprized of the ill uſage he had met with, moſt probably by the lord Cromwell's means, interpoſed in his behalf, and reſcued him out of the hands of his enemies.

The ſteady attachment Mr. Latimer had ſhewn to the cauſe of the Reformation, the aſſiſtance he had given in forwarding the divorce, and the great ſervices he might perform in a more conſpicuous ſtation, were ſtrong inducements to engage the queen, Anne Boleyn, and the lord Cromwell, now prime miniſter, to ſolicit his promotion. They, therefore, jointly recommended him to the king for one of the biſhopricks, Worceſter or Saliſbury, both vacant at this time, by the deprivation of Ghinuccii, and Campegio, two Italian biſhops, who fell under the king's diſpleaſure upon his rupture with Rome.

The king thus powerfully ſolicited, and being himſelf much diſpoſed to favour Mr. Latimer, offered him the ſee of Worceſter, which he accepted in 1535, and was thus ſcreened for the preſent from the malice of his enemies.

All

All the hiſtorians of theſe times mention him as a perſon remarkably zealous in the diſcharge of his new functions. In reforming the clergy of his dioceſe, which he thought the chief branch of the epiſcopal office, he was uncommonly active and reſolute. With the ſame ſpirit, he preſided over his eccleſiaſtical court; and he was frequent and attentive in his viſitations; in ordaining, ſtrict and wary; in preaching, indefatigable; in reproving and exhorting, ſevere and perſuaſive.

Thus far he could act with authority: but in other things, he found himſelf under difficulties. The ceremonies of the Popiſh worſhip gave him great offence; and he neither durſt, in times ſo dangerous and unſettled, lay them entirely aſide; nor, on the other hand, was he willing to retain them. In this dilemma his addreſs was admirable. He enquired into their origin; and, when he found any of them derived from a good meaning, he took care to inculcate that original meaning in the room of a corrupt interpretation. Thus he put the people in mind, when bread and water were diſtributed, that theſe elements, which had long been thought endowed with a kind of magical influence, were nothing more than appendages to the two ſacraments of the Lord's Supper, and Baptiſm: the former, he ſaid, reminded us of Chriſt's death; and the latter was only a ſimple repreſentation of our being purified from ſin.

While his endeavours to reform were thus confined within his own dioceſe, he was called upon to exert them in a more public manner, having received a ſummons to attend the parliament and convocation. This meeting was opened, in the uſual form, by a Latin ſermon, or rather an oration, ſpoken by biſhop Latimer, whoſe eloquence was, at this time, every where famous. But, as he did not diſtinguiſh himſelf in the debates of this convocation, which ran very high between the

the Proteſtant and Popiſh parties; we ſhall only add, that an animated attempt was at this time made to get him and Cranmer ſtigmatiſed by ſome public cenſure: but, through their own and Cromwell's intereſt, they were too well eſtabliſhed to fear any open attack from their enemies.

In the mean while, the biſhop of Worceſter, highly ſatisfied with the proſpect of a reformation, repaired to his dioceſe, having made no longer ſtay in London than was abſolutely neceſſary. He had no talents, and he knew that he had none, for ſtate-affairs; and therefore he meddled not with them. His whole ambition was, to diſcharge the paſtoral functions of a biſhop, neither aiming to diſplay the abilities of the ſtateſman, nor thoſe of the courtier. How very unqualified he was to ſupport the latter of theſe characters, will ſufficiently appear from the following ſtory.

It was the cuſtom, in thoſe days, for the biſhops to make preſents to the king, upon the firſt day of a new year; and many of them would preſent very liberally, proportioning their gifts to their expectations. Among the reſt, the biſhop of Worceſter, being at this time in town, waited upon the king with his offering; but, inſtead of a purſe of gold, which was the common oblation, he preſented a New Teſtament, with a leaf doubled down, in a very conſpicuous manner, to this paſſage, "Whoremongers and adulterers God "will judge."

After he had reſided about two years in his dioceſe, he was again ſummoned to London in 1539, to attend the buſineſs of parliament. Soon after his arrival, he was accuſed before the king of preaching a ſeditious ſermon. This ſermon he had preached at court, and according to his cuſtom, had been, unqueſtionably, ſevere enough againſt whatever he obſerved amiſs. His accuſer,

who

who is said to have been a person of great eminence about the king, was most probably Gardiner bishop of Winchester; who at this time was coming into great favour at court, and had alienated the king's mind from the Protestant interest. But Latimer being called upon by the king, with some sternness, to vindicate himself, was so far from denying or even palliating, what he had said, that he boldly justified it; and turning to the king, with that noble unconcern which a good conscience inspires, made this answer: "I never thought myself worthy, nor I never sued to be a preacher before your grace; but I was called to it, and would be willing, if you mislike me, to give place to my betters; for I grant there be a great many more worthy of the room than I am; and if it be your grace's pleasure to allow them for preachers, I could be content to bear their books after them. But if your grace allow me for a preacher, I would desire you to give me leave to discharge my conscience, and to frame my doctrine according to my audience. I had been a very dolt indeed, to have preached so at the borders of your realm, as I preach before your grace." The greatness of this answer baffled his accuser's malice; the severity of the king's countenance changed into a gracious smile; and the bishop was dismissed with that obliging freedom, which this monarch never used, but to those whom he esteemed.

About this time, the six articles of religion, having passed both houses, received the royal assent: they were justly styled the bloody articles, by the Protestants, who foresaw that they were calculated to restore the Romish religion. It was enacted by the statute, that, whoever should deny the doctrine of transubstantiation, either in speech or by writing, should be adjudged to be heretics, and burnt without any abjuration being admitted, and their

estates

eſtates be forfeited to the king: — that whoever ſhould maintain the neceſſity of communicating in both ſpecies;—affirm, that it was lawful for prieſts to marry;—that vows of chaſtity might be violated;—that private maſſes were uſeleſs;—or that auricular confeſſion was not neceſſary to ſalvation, were to be adjudged felons, and to ſuffer death as ſuch, without benefit of clergy.

Thus Papiſts and Proteſtants, by the verſatility of the king's diſpoſition and the violence of his temper, were alike expoſed to the flames; the one if they denied the king's ſupremacy, the other if they oppoſed the ſix articles. Our worthy prelate was one of the firſt who took offence at theſe articles: he refuſed to give his vote in favour of them, and he thought it wrong to hold any office in a church where ſuch terms of communion were required. He, therefore, reſigned his biſhopric. It is related of him, that when he came from the parliament houſe to his lodgings, he threw off his robes, and leaping up, declared to thoſe who ſtood about him, "That he thought himſelf lighter, than ever he found himſelf before."

After this he immediately retired into the country, where he thought of nothing, for the remainder of his days, but a ſequeſtered life. But having received a bruiſe by the fall of a tree, and the contuſion being ſo dangerous, that he was obliged to ſeek out for better aſſiſtance than could be afforded him by the unſkilful ſurgeons of thoſe parts, he repaired again to London. Here he found things ſtill in a worſe condition than he left them. The duke of Norfolk, and the biſhop of Wincheſter, who were the principal inſtruments in the ruin of the earl of Eſſex, were now at the head of the Popiſh party; and under the direction of theſe zealots, ſuch a ſcene of blood enſued, as England had not yet ſeen. Latimer, among others,

others, felt the effects of their bigotry; their emiſſaries ſoon found him, and accuſed him of having ſpoken againſt the ſtatutes of the ſix articles, in conſequence of which he was committed to the Tower. It does not appear, that any formal proceſs was carried on againſt him, or that he was ever judicially examined. He ſuffered, however, under one pretence or other, a cruel impriſonment during the remainder of king Henry's reign.

After remaining in the Tower upwards of ſix years, in the conſtant practice of every Chriſtian virtue, upon the acceſſion of Edward VI. he and all others who were impriſoned in the ſame cauſe, were ſet at liberty; and Latimer, whoſe old friends were now in power, was received by them with every mark of affection. Heath had ſucceeded him in the biſhopric of Worceſter; and the parliament ſent an addreſs to the protector, begging him to reſtore Mr. Latimer to the biſhopric of Worceſter, which greatly diſtreſſed Heath, who was a violent bigot to the Romiſh church, and was deprived in 1550. But on the reſumption being propoſed to Latimer, he deſired to be excuſed, alleging his great age, and the claim he had from thence to a private life. Having thus rid himſelf of all incumbrances, he accepted an invitation from his friend, archbiſhop Cranmer, and took up his reſidence at Lambeth, where he led a very retired life.

His chief employment was to hear the complaints, and to redreſs the injuries, of the poor people; and his character for ſervices of this kind was ſo univerſally known, that ſtrangers, from every part of England, would reſort to him, vexed either by the delays of public courts and offices, or harraſſed by the oppreſſions of the great. In theſe occupations, and in aſſiſting archbiſhop Cranmer to compoſe the homilies, which were ſet forth by authority,

in

in the firſt year of king Edward, he ſpent upwards of two years.

But as he was one of the moſt eloquent and popular preachers in England, he was appointed during the three firſt years of king Edward, to preach the Lent ſermons before the king. And upon theſe occaſions, he attacked the vices of the great with honeſt freedom, and charged them particularly with covetouſneſs, bribery, and extortion from the poor, ſo home, that it was impoſſible for them, by any ſelf deceit, to avoid the direct application of his reproofs to themſelves.

Upon the revolution at court, after the duke of Somerſet's death, he retired into the country, and made uſe of the king's licence, as a general preacher, in thoſe parts where he thought his labours might be moſt uſeful: but, upon the acceſſion of queen Mary, he ſoon loſt this liberty. The biſhop of Wincheſter, who had proſcribed him with the firſt, ſent a meſſenger to cite him before the council. He had notice of this deſign ſome hours before the meſſenger's arrival, but he made no uſe of the intelligence; like other eminent reformers of that time, he choſe rather to meet, than avoid perſecution.

The meſſenger therefore found him equipped for his journey: at which expreſſing his ſurprize, Mr. Latimer told him, That he was as ready to attend him to London, thus called upon to anſwer for his faith, as he ever was to take any journey in his life: and, that he doubted not but that God, who had already enabled him to ſtand before two princes, would enable him to ſtand before a third. The meſſenger then acquainting him, that he had no orders to ſeize his perſon, delivered a letter and departed. From which it is plain, that they choſe rather to drive him out of the kingdom, than to bring him to any public queſtion.

Mr.

Mr. Latimer, upon opening the letter, and finding it to contain a citation from the council, resolved to obey it. He set out, therefore, immediately for London. As he passed through Smithfield, where heretics were usually burnt, he said chearfully, "This place hath long groaned for me." The next morning he waited upon the council, who having loaded him with many severe reproaches, sent him to the Tower.

This was but a repetition of a former part of his life; only he now met with harsher treatment, and had more frequent occasions to exercise his resignation; which virtue no man more eminently possessed, neither did the usual chearfulness of his disposition now forsake him; of which we have a remarkable instance on record. A servant going out of his apartment, Mr. Latimer called after him, and bid him tell his master, That, unless he took better care of him, he should certainly escape him. Upon this message, the lieutenant, with some discomposure in his countenance, came to him, and desired an explanation of what he had said to his servant. "Why, you expect, I suppose, Mr. lieutenant," replied Mr. Latimer, "that I should be burned; but, if you do not allow me a little fire this frosty weather, I can tell you I shall first be starved with cold."

About the same time archbishop Cranmer, and Ridley, bishop of London, were committed to the Tower; of the former we shall take little notice at present, referring the reader to his life, in its proper place; but we shall here introduce such memoirs of bishop Ridley, as will be sufficient to do honour to his memory, without breaking-in upon our enlarged historical plan, by inserting all the uninteresting incidents of his life.

NICHOLAS RIDLEY first made himself conspicuous at Cambridge, in 1530; after having spent some

ſome time in the ſtudy of divinity at the Sorbonne at Paris, and at the univerſity of Louvaine in Flanders. At this time, two vain young ſtudents of Oxford, came to Cambridge, and challenged the whole univerſity to a public diſputation on the two following queſtions. The firſt was, Whether the civil law was more excellent (as a profeſſion) than medicine? The ſecond, Whether a woman condemned to death, being twice tied up, and the cords breaking, ought to be tied up again? No mention is made which ſide of theſe frivolous queſtions Mr. Ridley took, but it is certain, that he ſoon baffled one of the antagoniſts, and the other feigning ſickneſs, the diſputation ended, and the victory was aſcribed to Mr. Ridley of Univerſity College, though he had four aſſociates.

In 1536, archbiſhop Cranmer hearing of his great reputation as a man of extenſive learning, made him one of his chaplains, and being better pleaſed with him on a familiar acquaintance, he gave him the Vicarage of Herne in Kent, and ever after became his patron.

In 1543, a fruitleſs attempt was made by the Popiſh biſhops to ruin Mr. Ridley and his patron, though Mr. Ridley at this time only objected to ſome of the ſix bloody articles, and ſtill believed in the doctrine of tranſubſtantiation. But in 1545, having read ſome tracts publiſhed by the Zuinglians, in Germany, on the doctrine of the ſacrament, in which tranſubſtantiation was proved to be an innovation of the church of Rome, he became a thorough convert to all the tenets of the Reformation. In 1548, he was promoted to the ſee of Rocheſter; and upon the deprivation of Bonner, he was tranſlated to that of London, to which Weſtminſter, being ſuppreſſed, was united, the following year.

In

In 1551, bishop Ridley gave a striking proof of his piety and goodness, for though the sweating sickness raged violently at London, and was as fatal as the plague, he resided, and assiduously endeavoured to make this public calamity of use, by preaching repentance, and a reformation of manners.

It was this worthy prelate, who in 1553, preached the excellent sermon on charity before king Edward VI. which induced the pious young monarch to found the hospitals, as mentioned in the life of the duke of Northumberland. Thus worthily did he fill his high station in the church; and being zealous for the preservation of the Protestant religion, after the king's death, he preached at St. Paul's, in obedience to an order of council, recommending lady Jane Grey to the people as their lawful queen. For this offence, upon Mary's accession, he was committed to the Tower, with Cranmer, engaged in the same cause; and this bigoted queen, though she might have tried them with the other state prisoners for treason, chose rather to proceed against them as heretics.

After the three bishops had been imprisoned some months in the Tower, the convocation sent them, under the care of the lieutenant of the Tower, to Oxford, to be present at a public disputation to be held there; when it was said, the long depending controversy between the Papists and the Protestants, would be finally determined by the most eminent divines of both parties. But when they arrived there, which was in March 1554, they were all closely confined in the common prison, and denied the use of pen, ink, and paper; a plain proof that no free disputation was intended. In this comfortless situation their chief

resource

reſource was in prayer, in which they ſpent great part of every day. Mr. Latimer, particularly, would often continue kneeling till he was not able to riſe without help. The principal ſubject of his prayers was, that God would enable him to maintain the profeſſion of his religion to the laſt; that God would again reſtore his Goſpel to England; and preſerve the princeſs Elizabeth to be a comfort to this land.

Fox has preſerved a conference, afterwards committed to writing, which was held at this time, between Ridley and Latimer.

The two biſhops are repreſented ſitting in their priſon, ruminating upon the ſolemn preparations then making for their trial, of which probably they were now firſt informed. Biſhop Ridley firſt broke ſilence. "The time," ſaid he, "is now come; we are now called upon either to deny our faith, or to ſuffer death in its defence. You, Mr. Latimer, are an old ſoldier of Chriſt, and have frequently withſtood the fear of death; whereas I am raw in the ſervice, and unexperienced." With this preface he introduces a requeſt, that Mr. Latimer, whom he calls his father, would hear him propoſe ſuch arguments as he thought it moſt likely his adverſaries would urge againſt him, and aſſiſt him in providing himſelf with proper anſwers to them. To this, Mr. Latimer, in his uſual ſtrain of good-humour, anſwered, That, he fancied the good biſhop was treating him, as he remembered Mr. Bilney uſed formerly to do, who, when he wanted to teach him, would always do it under colour of being taught himſelf. "But, in the preſent caſe," ſaid he, "my lord, I am determined for myſelf, to give them very little trouble. I ſhall juſt offer them a plain account of my faith, and ſhall ſay very little more; for I know

know any thing more will be to no purpose. They talk of a free disputation; but, I am well assured their grand argument will be, that of their forefathers: We have a law, and by our law, ye ought to die." However, upon Mr. Ridley's pressing his request, they went upon the examination he desired.

This part of their conference contains only the common arguments against the tenets of Popery. When they had finished this exercise, Ridley desired Latimer's prayers, that he might be enabled to trust in God.

"Of my prayers," replied the old bishop, "you may be well assured; nor do I doubt but I shall have your's in return. And, indeed, prayer and patience should be our great resources. For myself, had I the learning of St. Paul, I should think it ill laid out upon an elaborate defence. Yet our case, my lord, admits of comfort. Our enemies can do no more than God permits; and God is faithful; who will not suffer us to be tempted above our strength. Be at a point with them; stand to that, and let them say and do what they please. To use many words would be in vain; yet it is requisite to give a reasonable account of your faith, if they will hear you. For other things, in a wicked judgement-hall, a man may keep silence after the example of Christ. As for their sophistry, you know falshood may often be displayed in the colours of truth. But, above all things, be upon your guard against the fear of death. This is the great argument you must oppose.—Poor Shaxton! (bishop of Salisbury, who recanted, and then became a persecutor of the Protestants), it is to be feared this argument had the greatest weight in his recantation. But let us be stedfast, and unmoveable; assuring ourselves that

that we cannot be more happy, than by being ſuch Philippians, as not only believe in Chriſt, but dare ſuffer for his ſake."

The commiſſioners from the convocation arrived at Oxford in April, and aſſembled at St. Mary's church, where, being arrayed in ſcarlet, they ſeated themſelves before the high altar, and placing the prolocutor Dr. Weſton, in the middle, they ſent for the priſoners. Cranmer and Ridley being firſt brought in, were told that the convocation had ſigned their belief of the following articles, which the queen expected they would either ſubſcribe, or confute.

"The natural body of Chriſt is really in the ſacrament after the words ſpoken by the prieſt.

"In the ſacrament, after the words of conſecration, no other ſubſtance does remain, than the ſubſtance of the body and blood of Chriſt.

"In the maſs is a ſacrifice propitiatory for the ſins of the quick and dead."

Cranmer and Ridley having refuſed to ſign theſe articles, copies were delivered to them, and the prolocutor fixed two ſeparate days, when he told them, it would be expected, that they ſhould publickly argue againſt them.

Biſhop Latimer was next introduced, like a primitive martyr, in his priſon attire. He had a cap upon his head, buttoned under his chin, a pair of ſpectacles hanging at his breaſt, a New Teſtament under his arm, and a ſtaff in his hand. He was almoſt exhauſted with preſſing through the crowd; and the prolocutor ordering a chair to be brought for him, he walked up to it, and, ſaying he was a very old man, ſat down without any ceremony. The articles were then read to him; which he denied alſo. The prolocutor, upon this,

telling him, that he must dispute on the Wednesday following, the old bishop, with as much chearfulness as he would have shewn upon the most ordinary occasion, shaking his palsied head, answered, smiling, "Indeed, gentlemen, I am just as well qualified to be made governor of Calais." He then complained, that he was very old, and very infirm; and said, That he had the use of no book but that under his arm; which he had read seven times over deliberately, without finding the least mention made of the mass. In this speech he gave great offence, by saying, in his humorous way, alluding to transubstantiation, that he could find neither the marrow-bones, nor the sinews, of the mass in the New Testament. Upon which, the prolocutor cried out, with some warmth, that he would make him find both: "That you will never do, master doctor," replied Latimer; after which he was silenced.

Our venerable old man adhered to the resolution that he had mentioned in his conference with Ridley, and, when the time of his disputation came, knowing, says Mr. Addison (Spectator N° 463), "How his abilities were impaired by age, and that it was impossible for him to recollect all those reasons which had directed him in the choice of his religion, he left his companions, who were in the full possession of their vigour and learning, to baffle and confound their antagonists by the force of reason," while he only repeated to his adversaries, the articles in which he firmly believed, and in the profession of which he was determined to die.

The particulars of this mock disputation, being tedious, uninteresting, and truly ridiculous, are omitted in favour of the important transactions of the reign of queen Mary, included in this volume. Suffice it, therefore, to observe, that all the argu-

ments uſed by Cranmer and Ridley, were treated with indecent contempt, and inſtead of being fairly canvaſſed, were over-ruled by the inſolence of authority, and the wild uproar of countenanced clamour and tumult.

In a few days after theſe ſhameful proceedings, the commiſſioners, ſeated in their accuſtomed form, ſent for the biſhops to St. Mary's church: where, after ſome affected exhortations to recant, the prolocutor firſt excommunicated, and then condemned them. As ſoon as the ſentence was read, biſhop Latimer, lifting up his eyes, cried out, "I thank God, moſt heartily, that he hath prolonged my life to this end!" To which the prolocutor replied, "If you go to heaven in this faith, I am thoroughly perſuaded I ſhall never get there."

The three biſhops were continued cloſe priſoners at Oxford, upwards of ſixteen months, till the pope's authority, and the legantine power were completely reſtored in England, by act of parliament; for it ſhould ſeem, that till this was effected, and the old ſanguinary laws againſt heretics revived, they could not be put to death, with the leaſt ſhadow of juſtice, the ſtatutes, on which the ſentence againſt them was founded, not being in force at the time when it was paſſed upon them. Therefore, a new commiſſion was granted by cardinal Pole, the pope's legate, to White, biſhop of Lincoln, Brookes, biſhop of Glouceſter, and Hollman, biſhop of Briſtol, empowering them to cite Ridley and Latimer before them, in order to receive them into the boſom of the church, if they would renounce their errors; or to condemn them as heretics, and deliver them over to the ſecular power, if they remained obſtinate.

On the 30th of September, 1555, the commiſſioners having ſeated themſelves, in great ſtate, in the divinity ſchool, ſent for Ridley, who refuſing

to subscribe to much the same articles as had before been tendered to him; they then sent for Latimer, and great pains were taken by the bishop of Lincoln, to make him renounce his opinion, in an eloquent and pathetic speech, in which he exhorted him to accept the mercy offered to him, and to acknowledge the authority of the pope.

Mr. Latimer thanked the bishop for his gentle treatment of him; but, at the same time, assured him, that it was in vain to expect from him any acknowledgment of the pope. He did not believe, he said, that any such jurisdiction had been given to the see of Rome, nor had the bishops of Rome behaved as if their power had been from God. He then quoted a Popish book, which had lately been written, to shew how grossly the Papists would misrepresent scripture: and concluded with saying, that he thought the clergy had nothing to do with temporal power, nor ought ever to be intrusted with it; and that their commission from their master, in his opinion, extended no farther than to the discharge of their pastoral functions. To this the bishop of Lincoln replied, "That he thought his style not quite so decent as it might be; and that as to the book which he quoted, he knew nothing of it." At this Latimer expressed his surprize, and told him, that although he did not know the author of it, yet it was written by a person of note, the bishop of Gloucester.

This produced some mirth among the audience, as the bishop of Gloucester sat then upon the bench. That prelate, finding himself thus publicly challenged, rose up, and, addressing himself to Mr. Latimer, paid him some compliments upon his learning, and then spoke in vindication of his book. But his zeal carrying him too far, the bishop of Lincoln, interrupting him, said, "We

came not here, my lord, to dispute with Mr. Latimer, but to take his answer to certain articles, which shall be proposed to him."

The articles were then read, and Mr. Latimer answered every one of them; at the same time protesting, which protestation he begged might be registered, that, notwithstanding his answers to the pope's commissioners, he by no means acknowledged the authority of the pope. The notaries having taken down his answers and protestation, the bishop of Lincoln told him, "That, as far as he could, he would shew lenity to him: that the answers which he had now given in, should not be prejudicial to him; but that he should be called upon the next morning, when he might make what alterations he pleased; and that he hoped in God, he should then find him in a better temper." To this the good old man answered, "That he begged they would do with him then just what they pleased, and that he might not trouble them, nor they him, another day; that as to his opinions, he was fixed in them, and that any respite would be needless." The bishop, however, told him, that he must appear the next morning, and then dissolved the assembly.

Accordingly, the commissioners sitting in the same form, he was brought in: and when the tumult was composed, the bishop of Lincoln told him, that although he might justly have proceeded to judgement against him, the day before, yet he could not help postponing it one day longer, "In hopes, said he, Sir, that you might reason yourself into a better way of thinking, and at length embrace, what we all so much desire, that mercy, which our holy church now, for the last time, offereth to you." "Alas! my lord, answered Mr. Latimer, your indulgence is to no purpose. When a man is convinced of a truth, even to deliberate

liberate is unlawful. I am fully reſolved againſt the church of Rome; and, once for all, my anſwer is, I never will embrace its communion. If you urge me farther, I will reply as St. Cyprian did, on a like occaſion. He ſtood before his judges, upon a charge of hereſy; and being aſked, which were more probably of the church of Chriſt, he and his party, who were every where deſpiſed, or they, his judges, who were every where in eſteem; he anſwered reſolutely, "That Chriſt had decided that point, when he mentioned it, as a mark of his diſciples, that they ſhould take up their croſs and follow him. If this then, my lords, be one of the characteriſtics of the Chriſtian church, whether ſhall we denominate by that name, the church of Rome, which hath always been a perſecutor, or that ſmall body of Chriſtians, which is perſecuted by it?" "You mention, Sir, ſaid Lincoln, with a bad grace, your cauſe and St. Cyprian's together: they are wholly different." "No, my lord, replied Latimer, his was the word of God, and ſo is mine."

The biſhop of Lincoln finding his repeated exhortations had no effect, at length paſſed ſentence upon him. Mr. Latimer then aſked him, whether there was any appeal from this judgment? "To whom, ſaid the biſhop of Lincoln, would you appeal?" "To the next general council, anſwered Mr. Latimer, that ſhall be regularly aſſembled." "It will be a long time, replied the biſhop, before Europe will ſee ſuch a council as you mean." Having ſaid this, he committed Mr. Latimer to the cuſtody of the mayor, and diſſolved the aſſembly. On the ſame day, likewiſe, ſentence was paſſed on Ridley, and the 16th of October, about a fortnight from this time, was fixed for their execution.

On the north side of the town, near Baliol-college, a spot of ground was chosen for the place of execution. Hither, on the sixteenth, the vice-chancellor of Oxford, and other persons of distinction, appointed for that purpose, repaired early in the morning; and a guard being drawn round the place, the prisoners were sent for. Bishop Ridley first entered this dreadful circle, accompanied by the mayor: soon after, bishop Latimer was brought in. The former was dressed in his episcopal habit; the latter, as usual, in his prison-attire. This difference in their dress made a moving contrast, and augmented the concern of the spectators: the bishop of London shewing what they had before been; Latimer, what they were now reduced to.

While they stood before the stake, about to prepare themselves for the fire, they were informed, they must first hear a sermon; and, soon after, Dr. Smith ascended a pulpit, prepared for that purpose, and preached on these words of St. Paul, "Though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing!" In his discourse, he treated the two bishops with great inhumanity, aspersing both their characters and tenets.

The sermon being ended, the bishop of London was beginning to say something in defence of himself, when the vice-chancellor, starting up suddenly from his seat, ran towards him, and stopping his mouth with his hand, told him, "That if he was going to recant, he should have leave: but he should be permitted in nothing farther." The bishop, thus checked, looking round, with a noble air, cried out, "We commit our cause then to Almighty God." And immediately an officer stepped up, and acquainted them, "That,

"That, at their leiſure, they might now make ready for the ſtake."

The ſpectators burſt into tears, when they ſaw theſe two venerable men now preparing for death. Reflecting, ſays Fox, on their preferments, the places of honour they held in the commonwealth, the favour they ſtood in with their princes, their great learning, and greater piety, they were overwhelmed with ſorrow to ſee ſo much dignity, ſo much honour, ſo much eſtimation, ſo many godly virtues, the ſtudy of ſo many years, and ſo much excellent learning, about to be conſumed in one moment. Mr. Latimer, having thrown off the old gown, which was wrapped about him, appeared in a ſhroud, prepared for the purpoſe; and "whereas before, he ſeemed a withered and crooked old man, he now ſtood bolt upright, as comely a father, as one might lightly behold."

When he, and his fellow-ſufferer were ready, they were both faſtened to a ſtake with an iron chain. They then brought a faggot ready kindled and laid it at Ridley's feet; to whom Latimer ſaid, "Be of good comfort maſter Ridley, and play the man; we ſhall this day light ſuch a candle, by God's grace, in England, as I truſt ſhall never be put out." He then recommended his ſoul to God, and the flames ſpeedily reaching him, he ſoon expired, ſeemingly without much pain. But it was not ſo with poor Ridley; for by ſome miſmanagement of the fire on his ſide of the ſtake, the wind blew the flames from the upper part of his body, and his legs were conſumed before the fire approached the vital parts, which made him endure dreadful torments for ſome time, till the flames caught ſome gunpowder, which had been tied about their waiſts, and had haſtened the death of Latimer. After this he was not obſerved to move, and the chain looſening, his body fell at the

feet of him, whose animating precepts, and noble fortitude, had so eminently contributed to enable him to pass through this fiery trial, to eternal bliss.

The characters of these holy martyrs, differed only in point of learning, in which Ridley was superior; for in piety, charity, humility, and exemplary manners, it is hard to say which excelled: and the theological tracts they left behind, though written in a very different style, were calculated to answer the sole purpose of promoting true religion, and practical morality.

*** *Authorities.* Gilpin's Life of Bishop Latimer, edit. 1755. Burnet, and Fox. Life of Bishop Ridley, by Gl. Ridley, LL.B. 1763.

The LIFE of

STEPHEN GARDINER,

BISHOP OF WINCHESTER.

(Including Memoirs of JOHN HOOPER, Bishop of GLOUCESTER.)

(A. D. 1483, to 1555.)

STEPHEN GARDINER, the chief contriver and instrument of the horrid persecution in the reign of queen Mary, of which we have already exhibited a melancholy specimen, is supposed to have been the natural son of Lionel Wid-

Widville, biſhop of Saliſbury, and brother to Elizabeth, queen conſort of Edward IV. But that prelate, to conceal his incontinence from the world, married his concubine to one of his menial ſervants, whoſe name was Gardiner, and who thereby became the reputed father of the infant, of whom ſhe was then pregnant. Young Gardiner was born about 1483, at Bury St. Edmund, in Suffolk, and the next certain account we have of him is, that he ſtudied at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he firſt diſtinguiſhed himſelf for his ſkill in the Greek, his elegance in ſpeaking and writing Latin, and a prompt capacity for learning in general. Afterwards, confining himſelf entirely to the ſtudy of the civil and canon law, about the year 1521, he was honoured with the degree of doctor in thoſe ſciences, and his great reputation at Cambridge, recommended him to the notice of the great men at court, particularly the duke of Norfolk and cardinal Wolſey, the latter of whom took him into his family, and made him his ſecretary.

In 1525, Henry paying a viſit to the cardinal, found his ſecretary employed in drawing the plan of a treaty of alliance with Francis I. which had been projected by the cardinal. The king peruſed it, and was ſo ſtruck with this outline of Gardiner's political talents, that from this time he enjoyed the confidence both of the king and his miniſter; and as a proof of it, he was ſent to Rome in 1528, to negociate the famous divorce. Edward Fox, provoſt of King's College, Cambridge, was joined in the commiſſion, but only as ſecond to Gardiner, who was eſteemed the beſt civilian in England, which alone was a ſufficient cauſe for ſending him on this embaſſy. In his credential letters to the pope, the cardinal ſtyles

him, "Primary secretary of the most secret councils."

When the ambassadors arrived at Ovieto, where the pope then resided, Dr. Gardiner used very free language with his holiness, shewed him the danger he was in of losing the king by playing a double game, and how much injury he would do to cardinal Wolsey, if he disappointed his expectations. By this method he succeeded in obtaining what his instructions required, a new commission for trying the cause in England, directed to Wolsey and Campejus.

Fox was sent home with a full account of this negociation, which highly pleased the king and Anne Boleyn; but the pope being taken ill, Wolsey sent dispatches to Gardiner, desiring him to wait the event, and to exert himself in supporting his interest with the cardinals, that in case of the pope's death, he might be elected his successor.

In the course of this long embassy, the pope, whose mind was continually perplexed, and to whom the Imperial, French, and English ministers allowed no quiet, fell dangerously ill again; the distractions of his mind operating upon the humours of his body, and this, as might be expected, gave a new turn to the intrigues of Rome.

Dr. Gardiner had as large a share in these as any minister; for he laboured the cause of the cardinal of York, in case the pope's death should make way for a new election. He also managed the whole affair with his holiness much to the satisfaction of the king, the cardinal, and Anne Boleyn; all of whom wrote him most thankful and affectionate letters; till, finding the pope was determined to do nothing, Henry called Gardiner from

from Rome, in order to make uſe of him in the management of his cauſe before the legantine court.

Upon his return, he had the archdeaconry of Norfolk beſtowed upon him by biſhop Nyx, of Norwich, for whom he had obtained ſome favours from the pope. He was inſtalled on the firſt of March, 1529; and this, as far as appears, was his firſt preferment in the church: but in the ſtate he made a more rapid progreſs; for the king, having conſtant occaſion for his ſervices, took him from Wolſey, and made him ſecretary of ſtate. And when cardinal Campejus avoked the cauſe of the divorce to Rome, the following year, Gardiner, in conjunction with Fox, found out Cranmer, and having engaged him to write in favour of the divorce, they undertook to manage the univerſity of Cambridge, ſo as to procure their declaration in the king's cauſe, after Dr. Cranmer's book ſhould appear in ſupport of it; which taſk by great addreſs, and much artifice, they fully accompliſhed.

For this ſervice, Henry amply rewarded him with eccleſiaſtical preferments: in the ſpring of the year 1531, he was inſtalled archdeacon of Leiceſter, upon which he reſigned the archdeaconry of Norfolk, and, in September, he alſo reſigned that, in favour of his coadjutor Dr. Edward Fox, who became afterwards biſhop of Hereford. In November, he was conſecrated biſhop of Wincheſter.

Dr. Gardiner, it ſeems, was not apprized of the king's intentions, who would ſometimes *rate* him ſoundly, and, at the inſtant he beſtowed it, put him in mind of it. "I have," ſaid he, "often ſquared with you, Gardiner, (a word he uſed for theſe kind of rebukes), but I love you

never the worſe, as the biſhopric I give you will convince you."

Henry had another practice, which he called *whetting*; this was ſcolding with pen, ink, and paper, and when ſome of Gardiner's friends ſaw letters to him in this ſtyle, they concluded he was a ruined man, but he, who knew the king's temper, was in no pain upon that account.

Our prelate ſat with Dr. Cranmer, archbiſhop of Canterbury, when that prelate pronounced the ſentence of divorce againſt queen Catharine; or, rather, declared her marriage with the king null and void, on the 20th of May, 1533. The ſame year, he was ſent to Marſeilles, that he might have an eye to the interview between the French king and the pope. Bonner, afterwards biſhop of London, was ſent after him, with Henry and Cranmer's appeal from the pope, to the next general council, lawfully called; and he complained bitterly, in a letter to Cromwell, of Gardiner's haughty, ſtubborn, wilful temper, which, as his power increaſed, broke forth into acts of brutal cruelty.

Upon his return to England, he was called upon, as other biſhops were, not only to acknowledge and yield obedience to the king as ſupreme head of the church, but to defend it; which he did: and this defence he publiſhed, under the title, "Of True Obedience." His pen was made uſe of upon other occaſions, and he never declined vindicating the king's proceedings in the buſineſs of the divorce, the ſubſequent marriage, or throwing off the dominion of the ſee of Rome; which writings then acquired him the higheſt reputation. But he was an arch diſſembler; for all this time he was ſtrongly attached to the ſee of Rome, and to every ſuperſtition of the Romiſh church. This

was

was discoverable, through every veil of disguise, for in 1536, he opposed Cranmer's petition to the king for a new translation of the Bible, and Cromwell's design of forming a religious league with the princes of Germany, as a means of promoting the Reformation. About this time, he went on a second embassy to France, and procured the banishment of Reginald Pole from that kingdom, who had before been exiled from England.

In 1538, he was sent ambassador, with Sir Henry Knevit, to the German Diet, where he is allowed to have acquitted himself well in regard to his commission; but he was justly suspected of holding a secret correspondence with the pope, in order to introduce the papal authority again into England. And this suspicion was farther confirmed when, upon his return from Germany, he advised the king to exert himself zealously in the prosecution of the *sacramentarians*, or heretics denying the real presence: in consequence of which fatal advice, one John Lambert, a schoolmaster, who had committed to writing his arguments against transubstantiation, was accused of heresy before Cranmer and Latimer, who endeavoured to screen him from prosecution; but Lambert, by a fatal resolution, appealed to the king, and Gardiner improved this opportunity so well, that he prevailed upon the king to try him in person, which was accordingly done, in great state, in Westminster-hall, before the lords of the council, the prelates, and several of the nobility. The king first attempted to prove the doctrine of the real presence from scripture, and after him, archbishop Cranmer; but Gardiner thinking he argued but faintly, interposed in the argument, and was followed by eight other bishops; so that the poor man was at last over-awed and silenced, condemned, and soon after burnt in Smithfield,

field, with circumstances of uncommon barbarity.

In 1539, Gardiner gave a fresh instance of his persecuting spirit, for he was the principal promoter of the act of the six articles, commonly called the Bloody Statute, when it was before the house of lords, and there can be but little doubt, from his conduct afterwards, of the truth of the accusation brought against him, by writers of the first authority, that he framed the six articles of this statute. The death of Dr. Robert Barnes, who was burnt very soon after, upon this statute, is also with reason attributed to him: for he was first imprisoned on account of a sermon, in which he had arraigned the conduct of the bishop.

Upon the disgrace of Cromwell earl of Essex, Gardiner was elected chancellor of the university of Cambridge, and after the death of that minister, his influence increasing at court, he constantly exerted himself in oppressing the Protestant and promoting the Popish religion.

His next step was to decry the new English translation of the bible, which had been published in 1536, by the authority of Cromwell, and was brought before the convocation to be examined, soon after his death. Gardiner condemned it as defective, and meanly quibbled upon many Latin words in the New Testament, which he idly pretended could not be translated with proper dignity, and therefore must be continued in Latin. Two of the words, indiscriminately taken, will convince the reader of the poverty of this artifice. *Penitentia*, *Adorare*. But delay of its approbation was obtained, and archbishop Cranmer was obliged to move the king to have the perusal of it referred to the two universities.

In 1543, we find Gardiner one of the commissioners appointed to conclude a treaty of peace with Scotland,

Scotland, and alſo a treaty of marriage between the young queen of Scotland, and Edward prince of Wales. But theſe affairs of ſtate did not take off his attention from his two favourite points; perſecution of thoſe he called heretics, and preventing the progreſs of what was ſtyled the new-learning; which conſiſted chiefly in acquiring ſuch ſkill in the Greek language, as enabled men to read the primitive fathers, and thereby to diſcover the modern innovations of the Romiſh church. Accordingly, this year he informed againſt ſome heretics at Windſor, and moved the king in council, for a commiſſion to ſearch ſuſpected houſes for heretical books, in conſequence of which four perſons were apprehended, three of whom were condemned and burnt

His infamous attempt to ruin archbiſhop Cranmer, which will be found in that prelate's life, happend about this time, and the king from this time began to conceive a bad opinion of him, and a circumſtance ſoon occurred, which put it beyond a doubt that he ſecretly diſliked the king's proceedings, and in his heart wiſhed for the reſtoration of the pope's authority. In 1544, German Gardiner, the biſhop's relation, chief confident, and private ſecretary, was apprehended, upon information, tried, condemned, and executed for denying the king's ſupremacy. The king rationally concluded, that his maſter muſt ſecretly harbour the ſame ſentiments, and upon this ſuſpicion he had determined to ſend him to the Tower; but the biſhop appriſed of his deſign, and knowing the king loved ſincerity, went to him, fell on his knees, acknowledged his guilt, craved his pardon, and promiſed for the future to be a new man.

He was, indeed, forgiven; and in 1545, he was ſent to Flanders on an embaſſy to the emperor, to ſolicit a league between Charles, Francis I. and Henry;

Henry; which opportunity Cranmer wanted to improve, by perſuading the king to aboliſh ſome of the moſt ridiculous ceremonies of the church; but Gardiner receiving intelligence of his deſigns, wrote to the king, that he ſhould not ſucceed with the emperor, if any innovations were ſuffered in religion, in England. Upon his return in 1546, the perſecution, which had abated during his abſence, was renewed with additional cruelty, by him and his aſſociate the lord chancellor Wriotheſley, who, when the lieutenant of the Tower refuſed to torture a lady (Mrs. Ayſcough) any longer, had the brutal inhumanity, to thrown off his gown, and draw the rack himſelf, till he left her almoſt lifeleſs: but unable to extort from her any accuſations of the ducheſs of Suffolk, and other ladies of the court, ſhe was burnt ſoon after for her own heretical opinions.

But Gardiner carried his ſanguinary views ſtill higher, aiming at a royal victim, the queen Catherine Parr. This lady favoured Cranmer, and the friends of the Reformation, which rendered her extremely obnoxious to the Popiſh party. And in the laſt year of Henry's life, they were very near accompliſhing her deſtruction; for the queen had put the king out of humour, by adviſing him too freely to complete the reformation: and when ſhe had retired, after an argument upon this ſubject, Henry, in the preſence of Gardiner, exclaimed with great warmth: "A good hearing it is when women become ſuch clerks, and a thing much to my comfort, to come in mine old age, to be taught by my wife." The biſhop with equal ſubtilty and malice aggravated the queen's offence, and inſinuated, that he and his friends could make great diſcoveries againſt the queen, if they were not afraid of her faction. By ſuch arts he prevailed upon the king to ſign an order for

arreſting

arreſting the queen, but the chancellor, who was entruſted with this paper, dropped it out of his boſom, and it was immediately carried to the queen, who ſo wrought upon the king's affections, as to diſpel his ſuſpicions; and this brought ſevere reproaches upon the chancellor, and the king's reſentment againſt the biſhop grew ſo ſtrong, that he could never after endure him.

Yet the biſhop ſtill continued about the court, and though upon Henry's death he had the mortification to find he was excluded the regency, he ceaſed not to importune the protector by letters, diſſuading him from making any alterations in religion during the minority. But Somerſet and Cranmer had now began to take meaſures for compleating the Reformation; and amongſt others, a royal viſitation was ſet on foot, and the homilies were appointed to be read in all churches. At the ſame time, the paraphraſe of the New Teſtament by Eraſmus was tranſlated into Engliſh, and a copy ordered to be kept in every pariſh. Gardiner's oppoſition to theſe proceedings was ſo great, that he was cited to appear before the council in September 1547, where he was accuſed of having written letters to that board, and of having uttered in converſation, many things in contempt of the king's viſitation; in confirmation of which, he then refuſed to receive the homilies, or to pay any obedience to the king's viſitors in his dioceſe: whereupon he was committed a cloſe priſoner to the Fleet, where he was treated with improper ſeverity, and indeed his impriſonment was illegal, as he had not been judicially convicted of any crime. However, he was releaſed in December, at the end of the ſeſſions of parliament, and immediately repaired to his dioceſe.

Here he oppoſed to the utmoſt of his power, the preachers who were ſent down by the council, to

to inculcate the principles of the Reformation; in ſome places, ordering the rectors to deny them the uſe of their pulpits, in others, he aſcended before them, and warned the congregations to beware of ſuch teachers. Complaints being ſent to court of this conduct, he was once more brought before the council, and after being reprimanded, he was ordered to keep to his own houſe till he had given ſatisfaction, which was to be done by preaching a ſermon before the king and court, and with reſpect to the matter of his diſcourſe, he was to be directed by Sir William Cecil. But in the ſermon, he was ſo far from giving ſatisfaction, that while he acknowledged the king's ſupremacy, he denied that of the regency, and ſpoke contemptuouſly of the council; he was therefore ſent to the Tower the next day, being the 30th of June, 1548, where he continued a priſoner during the remainder of the reign of Edward VI.

When the protector's diſgrace was projected, his enemies thought, that they could not employ a more ſkilful perſon than Gardiner to draw up the articles of impeachment againſt him, and having performed this ſervice, he expected his releaſe from the new council, but was miſerably diſappointed in his expectations.

What paſſed during his confinement, is of little conſequence to the reader; and the conferences he had with the lords of the council, and their treatment of him, are variouſly repreſented by the Popiſh and Proteſtant writers. It may, therefore, be ſufficient to obſerve, that he once ſigned his approbation of all the meaſures that had been taken towards a Reformation; notwithſtanding which, the Popiſh writers boaſt his ſteady and invariable attachment to the Romiſh religion: but this was not the firſt inſtance of his duplicity.

In

In 1551, after twenty-two ſittings of a court of delegates, he was deprived of his biſhopric, for diſobedience and contempt of the king's authority.

From this time, he remained quiet, and employed himſelf in compoſing Latin poems, tranſlations into Engliſh verſe of the poetical part of the Old Teſtament, and ſome polemical tracts. He likewiſe kept up his ſpirits, conſoling himſelf with an idea, which he often expreſſed, that he ſhould live to ſee another change of fortune, and another court, in which he ſhould be as great as ever.

This prepoſſeſſion of Gardiner's, which is not in the leaſt wonderful, if the political ſituation of affairs, during Edward's illneſs, is duly attended to, was but too well founded; for queen Mary, on the third of Auguſt, 1553, made her ſolemn entry into the Tower, when Gardiner, in the name of himſelf and his fellow-priſoners, the duke of Norfolk, the ducheſs of Somerſet, the lord Courtney, and others of high rank, made a congratulatory ſpeech to her majeſty, who gave them all their liberties, and Lloyd ſays, ſhe kiſſed Gardiner, and called him her priſoner (a priſoner for her cauſe). On the eighth of the ſame month he performed, in the queen's preſence, the Romiſh obſequies for the late king Edward, whoſe body was buried in Weſtminſter, with the Engliſh ſervice, by archbiſhop Cranmer, the funeral ſermon being preached by biſhop Day. On the ninth biſhop Gardiner went to Wincheſter-houſe, in Southwark, after a confinement of ſomewhat more than five years. On the twenty-third, he was declared chancellor of England, though his patent did not paſs till the twenty-firſt of September. On the firſt of October he had the honour of crowning the queen, and on the fifth of the ſame

month

month he opened the firſt parliament, in her reign. He was alſo re-choſen chancellor of Cambridge, and reſtored to the maſterſhip of Trinity-hall.

We ſhall now be able to diſcover the true character of Gardiner, by obſerving his conduct in the different capacities of a civilian, a prime miniſter, and an eccleſiaſtical inquiſitor.

It has been aſſerted, that he always acted upon principle, and if he erred, that he did it conſcienciouſly. But Burnet juſtly imputes the frequent changes in his political conduct, and his cruelty, to his abject and ſervile ſpirit. The reader will judge from the following facts. Promoting the divorce was the firſt ſervice he rendered the father; and now reverſing this divorce, and branding all who had been concerned in it, was the firſt ſervice he performed for the daughter. He had alſo aſſiſted, promoted, and defended, the king's ſupremacy, as much or more than any man in the kingdom; and had the reputation of penning the publications in defence of Henry's marriage with Anne Boleyn, which he now condemned as null and illegal. Theſe do not ſpeak in favour of his integrity as a civilian and canoniſt.

Mary, on her acceſſion, had publicly declared, that ſhe would force no man's conſcience on account of religion. The chancellor, even when no prieſt, was ſtyled the keeper of the king's conſcience; but Gardiner, though a prieſt, chancellor and prime miniſter, adviſed Mary to violate her promiſe, as ſoon as he had the management of public affairs. For, before the end of the year, all the laws concerning religion, made in the reign of Edward VI. were repealed; and it was enacted, that there ſhould be no other form of divine ſervice, but that which was uſed in the laſt year of Henry VIII. The convocation was aſſembled,

when

when thoſe clergy who were in the Proteſtant intereſt, were threatened, inſulted, and interrupted in their arguments by Dr. Weſton, the prolocutor, who ſaid, "You have the word, but we have the ſword." By which means the doctrine of tranſubſtantiation was reſtored. Soon after, ſeveral Proteſtant prelates were deprived, and the commiſſions for this purpoſe were directed to Gardiner, Bonner biſhop of ondon, and others. Theſe proceedings threatening a ſevere perſecution, above eight hundred Proteſtant ſubjects fled the kingdom, and they made a timely eſcape; for in the beginning of the year 1554, the Marſhalſea in London, and the priſons in other parts of the kingdom, were filled with pretended heretics. During theſe commencements of cruelty, ambaſſadors arrived from the emperor Charles V. likewiſe king of Spain, to adjuſt a treaty of marriage between the queen and the emperor's ſon Philip. This intended marriage was obnoxious to the whole nation, but moſt to the friends of the Reformation, who dreaded a Spaniſh government and a Spaniſh inquiſition; and it gave riſe to the rebellion, under Sir Thomas Wyat, in which the duke of Suffolk, though a priſoner in the Tower, was concerned; the inſurrection was ſoon quelled; but the unfortunate and amiable lady Jane Grey, the moſt learned and accompliſhed woman of the age, whom, it was thought, the queen would have pardoned, fell a victim to this laſt raſh attempt of her father. Lady Jane, her huſband, and father were beheaded in April, and the princeſs Elizabeth was confined in the Tower It is aſſerted by ſome writers, that Gardiner adviſed the putting her to death, ſaying it was in vain to lop off the branches, if they did not deſtroy the root, the hope of the heretics; but the reſt of the council over-ruled this infamous motion.

A new

A new parliament being called, and great uſe having been made of 500,000 l. ſent over by the emperor, during the elections, the marriage-treaty was approved and ratified by both houſes, after which this parliament was diſſolved, and in July, the nuptials were ſolemnized at Wincheſter, by Gardiner: Philip being in the twenty-ſeventh year of his age, and Mary in her thirty-ninth. After the ceremony of the marriage, they were proclaimed king and queen of England, France, Naples and Jeruſalem, to which were added many other pompous titles. And in the way to London the royal pair ſtopped at Windſor, where Philip was inſtalled Knight of the Garter.

A new parliament was choſen, being the third, and met on the eleventh of November, the chief tranſactions of which relating to cardinal Pole, will occur in his life; but it muſt be obſerved, that a bill paſſed for reviving the old ſtatutes againſt heretics, made in the reigns of Richard II. Henry IV. and Henry V. and now Gardiner being in poſſeſſion of a ſtatute for putting Proteſtants to death, which he was not till this act paſſed, he took to his aſſiſtance another evil ſpirit, worſe than himſelf, Bonner, biſhop of London, and under the hands of theſe bloody inquiſitors, the flames of perſecution blazed forth with redoubled fury in all parts of the kingdom.

Gardiner began with John Rogers, prebendary of St. Paul's, who was condemned by him, and the council, and burnt in Smithfield, in January 1555; and he refuſed to let his wife viſit him after his condemnation, becauſe he was a prieſt, whoſe marriages were now declared illegal. Several others of inferior note, ſuffered the ſame month, in London.

At the ſame time, Hooper, biſhop of Glouceſter, was re-examined.

This

This eminent prelate was a native of Somerſetſhire, born in 1495, and educated at Merton college, Oxford. Soon after the ſtatute of the ſix articles was enforced, he quitted the univerſity, and lived ſome time with Sir Thomas Arundel, as his chaplain and ſteward; but Sir Thomas diſcovering that he was a proteſtant, he fled to France; but diſliking the conduct of the reformed in that kingdom, he returned home. However, finding the perſecution upon the articles ſtill continued, he diſguiſed himſelf in the habit of a ſailor, and got ſafe to Switzerland, where he was kindly received by Bullinger. On the acceſſion of Edward VI. he came back to England, and was made chaplain to the protector, and in 1549, he was the chief accuſer of Bonner, who was then deprived, and never forgave him.

In 1550, Hooper was made biſhop of Worceſter, but refuſing to wear the uſual veſtments, Cranmer refuſed to conſecrate him, and he was ſent to the fleet for contumacy; but the following year the affair was compromiſed, and he was permitted to hold the biſhopric of Worceſter, in commendam with Glouceſter.

When Mary was ſeated on the throne, he was ſent for, to anſwer to the complaints exhibited againſt him by Heath (the deprived biſhop of Worceſter) and Bonner, who pretended he had falſely accuſed him in the late reign. But when he arrived at London, theſe charges were dropped; he was proceeded againſt as a heretic; and was deprived and condemned by his avowed enemies, Gardiner and Bonner, two of the commiſſioners appointed to deprive the prelates.

From this time till the before-mentioned re-examination, he had been confined in the Fleet priſon, but now he was removed to Newgate on his refuſing to recant. Here he was viſited by Bonner and

and his chaplains, who offered him riches and honours, if he would become a convert to the Romiſh religion; but finding their endeavours fruitleſs, they ſpread a report, that he had recanted; and being informed of this treachery, it afflicted him ſo much, that he wrote a letter to his friends, to aſſure them and the public, that he was more than ever confirmed in the Proteſtant faith. This exaſperated the two biſhops, and Bonner was ſent to degrade him in Newgate, not as a biſhop, for they did not acknowledge him as ſuch, but as a prieſt: and on the firſt of February, 1555, he was ſent to Glouceſter, guarded by a troop of horſe, and on the ninth, he was burnt in that city, in a moſt inhuman manner, the fire being made of green wood, ſo that he was conſumed by ſlow degrees, and ſuffered the moſt dreadful torments with great patience and fortitude, above three quarters of an hour.

Gardiner had now brought three of the moſt eminent prelates of the reformed religion to the ſtake, but Cranmer ſtill remained, who was reſerved to anſwer his particular views. He expected that cardinal Pole would ſucceed to the archbiſhoprick of Canterbury, if Cranmer was taken off at this time, and the death of pope Marcellus II. being daily expected, he was determined to uſe his intereſt to obtain the papacy for Pole, in which caſe he ſhould have no rival for the ſee of Canterbury. But though the pope died while Gardiner was holding a kind of congreſs at Calais for a treaty of peace between France and Spain, in which commiſſion the earl of Arundel and lord Paget were joined, their united intereſt by letters could not prevail at Rome, where the conclave choſe Paul IV.

Gardiner before he went upon this embaſſy, had left the perſecution of the Proteſtants chiefly to Bonner,

Bonner, and upon his return to England, he did not appear to be so sanguine in this dreadful business as before. The new pope detesting Pole, Gardiner held a secret correspondence with his holiness, and had now more extensive views, for he was promised a cardinal's hat, and the legantine power, as soon as Pole could be decently recalled, after his great services, so lately performed in reconciling England to the see of Rome.

But death put a stop to his ambitious projects, on the 13th of November of this same year, in the course of which Latimer, Ridley, Hooper, and Farrar bishop of St. David's, besides a great number of private persons, had been sacrificed to his unrelenting cruelty. It is said, he died in great agonies, of a suppression of urine, but various reports were propagated, respecting both the cause and manner of his death. However, it is certain, that he was ill from the twenty-third of October, the last day of his appearance in parliament; and during his illness it is generally agreed, that he felt some remorse of conscience for his past life, frequently exclaiming, *Erravi cum Petro, sed non flevi cum Petro.* "I have sinned with Peter, but I have not wept with him."

He died at the palace at Whitehall, from whence his remains were removed to Winchester house in Southwark, and interred with extraordinary pomp and solemnity.

This prelate's character may be summed up in a few words. He was a professed courtier, who could make his conscience yield to the complexion of the times; he was a learned man, it is acknowledged, but instead of being a friend to learned men, as many writers have asserted, he put them to death, if they differed from him in opinion. He was a crafty negociator, but by no means an

able ſtateſman, for his adminiſtration was inglorious both at home and abroad; and as for his ſpirit of perſecution, it was the effect of a baſe, narrow mind, and a cruel nature, not of any fixed principles of religion, for he never had any. His perſon appears to have been very far from agreeable; and in a deſcription of him, written by Dr. Poynet, who ſucceeded him in the ſee of Wincheſter, is the following paſſage: "This doctor hath a "ſwart colour, hanging look, frowning brows, "eyes an inch within his head, a noſe hooked "like a buzzard, noſtrils like a horſe, ever ſnuf-"fing in the wind, and a ſparrow mouth." But as Poynet had a great diſlike to his predeceſſor, this portrait may juſtly be ſuppoſed to be caricatured by perſonal ill-will.

*** *Authorities.* Lord Herbert's Life of Henry VIII. Burnet. Biog. Britannica, and Britiſh Biography, Vol. II.

THE

THE LIFE OF THOMAS CRANMER, ARCHBISHOP of CANTERBURY.

[A. D. 1498, to 1556.]

THIS eminent prelate was the ſon of Thomas Cranmer, Eſq. and was born at Aſlacton, in Nottinghamſhire, in 1489. He was admitted of Jeſus College, Cambridge, in 1503, and diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his unwearied application to his ſtudies. He had been ſome time fellow of this college, when he married, but his wife dying within the year, he was again admitted into his fellowſhip.

In the year 1523, he commenced doctor of divinity, and became reader of the divinity lecture in his own college.

He had alſo now acquired ſo much reputation in the univerſity, that he was appointed one of the examiners of thoſe who commenced batchelors and doctors in divinity, and according to whoſe approbations the univerſity allowed them to proceed. In this office Dr. Cranmer did much ſervice to the cauſe of religion: for it was his cuſtom to examine candidates out of the ſcriptures; and he would by

no means let them pass, if he found them unacquainted with the sacred writings. This was a sort of learning, of which the friars in general were extremely ignorant. They were much better read in Scotus and Aquinas, than in the Bible. The friars, therefore, Dr. Cranmer sometimes turned back as insufficient, advising them to study the scriptures some years longer, before they came for their degrees, it being, he said, a shame for a professor in divinity to be unskilled in the book, wherein the knowledge of God, and the true principles of Divinity, were chiefly to be found. In consequence of this behaviour, he was very heartily hated by the Friars. However, some of the more ingenious of them afterwards returned him great and public thanks for refusing them their degrees; acknowledging, that having been thereby put upon the study of the scriptures, they had attained to a more sound knowledge in religion, than they otherwise should have done.

During Dr. Cranmer's residence at Cambridge, the question arose concerning king Henry's divorce; and the plague breaking out in the university about this time, he retired to a friend's house at Waltham-abbey; where casually meeting with Gardiner and Fox, the one the king's secretary, the other his almoner, and discoursing with them about the divorce, he freely delivered his opinion, "That it would be much better, to have the question, whether a man could lawfully marry his brother's wife? discussed and decided by the divines, upon the authority of God's word, than thus from year to year, to prolong the time, by having recourse to the pope. That there was but one truth in it, which the scripture would soon declare and manifest, being handled by learned men; and that might be done as well at the universities in England, as at Rome, or elsewhere."

This

This declaration being communicated to the king, it so highly pleased him, that he directly said, "the man had the sow by the right ear," and gave orders, that Cranmer should be sent for to court.

Upon his arrival, which was in 1529, he was appointed chaplain to the king, and Sir Thomas Boleyn, father of Anne Boleyn, was desired to receive him into his family, and to furnish him with such books as he should require, to enable him to execute the king's command; which was, that he should draw up a defence in writing of the opinion he had given respecting the divorce. In the treatise, he shewed by the testimonies of the scriptures, of general councils, and ancient writers, that the bishop of Rome had no authority to dispense with God's word; and from that, he proved the illegality of the king's marriage with Catherine of Arragon, his late brother Arthur's widow. When he had finished that tract, the king sent him to Cambridge to dispute publickly upon the subject, accompanied by Gardiner, Fox, and other learned men, and they soon brought over a number of divines and civilians to Cranmer's opinion; who, upon his return to court, was rewarded with a benefice, and the archdeaconry of Taunton.

The following year Dr. Cranmer was sent by the king to France, Italy, and Germany, to dispute upon the same subject; Sir Thomas Boleyn, now earl of Wiltshire, being made chief ambassador upon this occasion, and furnished with credentials to the respective courts for this purpose. In France they convinced many learned men. At Rome, Cranmer's treatise was delivered to the pope, and he offered to justify it, at a public disputation; but, after sundry promises and appointments, no adversary appeared; and at length, after some private conferences with the chief men about the pope, it was openly granted, in the pope's chief

court of the Rota, that the marriage was unlawful: but they ſtill defended the pope's authority to diſpenſe with the ſcripture law.

The earl of Wiltſhire tranſmitted ſuch encomiums of Cranmer, that the king ſent him a commiſſion to be his ſole ambaſſador, upon the ſame cauſe to the emperor. This gave him an opportunity of travelling through Germany, and as the emperor's court at that time was conſtantly in motion, by following it, he became acquainted with the moſt eminent German divines and civilians, many of whom embraced his opinion with reſpect to the marriage. Among others, the celebrated Oſiander, paſtor of Nuremberg, publickly defended it, and an intimacy followed, which produced a cloſe alliance, for Cranmer married Oſiander's niece.

While Cranmer remained in Germany, the king employed him in other negociations, particularly in eſtabliſhing a treatiſe of commerce between England, and the emperor's dominions in the low countries. And he went on a ſpecial embaſſy to the duke of Saxony and other Proteſtant princes.

Upon the death of archbiſhop Warham, the king reſolved to place Cranmer at the head of the church; and though it is aſſigned as the ſole reaſon for this extraordinary promotion, that Henry judged him the fitteſt perſon among the whole body of the Engliſh clergy for this high ſtation, there can be no doubt that he had a ſuperior political reaſon, which was, to give ſanction to his opinion concerning the divorce, on which he could then paſs a deciſive ſentence, as head of the church, under the king; the pope's authority, in this caſe, being already ſubverted in his treatiſe. With this view Dr. Cranmer was ordered home, and upon his arrival he intreated the king to ſuffer him

him to decline the high honour he offered to confer upon him; but Henry insisting upon his acceptance of the archbishopric, Cranmer now started a new opinion, which at first surprised the king, but in the end served to strengthen his attachment to him. He asserted, that the king was the supreme governor of the church of England, as well in ecclesiastical as temporal concerns, and that the full right of donation of all benefices and bishoprics appertained to him, and not to any foreign authority. And, therefore, if he might receive the archbishopric from the king, he would accept it, but not (as was then the custom) from the pope, whose authority within the king's realm he denied. Thus was the foundation laid of the supremacy of the kings of England by this able divine.

In conformity to this declaration, he was consecrated in March 1533, when he made a notarial protest, that he did not admit the pope's authority, any farther than it agreed with the express word of God, and that it might be lawful for him at all times to speak against him, and to impugn his errors, when there should be occasion. The pope, however, agreeably to usual custom, sent over the bulls, then judged necessary to complete the investiture; but Cranmer surrendered them to the king, from whom alone he consented to hold this dignity.

The first service which the new archbishop performed for the king, was, pronouncing the sentence of his divorce from queen Catherine. This was done on the twenty-third of May. Gardiner, bishop of Winchester, and the bishops of London, Bath, and Lincoln, being joined in commission with him.

On the twenty-eighth of the same month, he held a court at Lambeth, in which he confirmed

the king's marriage with Anne Boleyn. And at the close of this year, when the pope's supremacy came under debate, the archbishop answered all the arguments brought in defence of it, with such strength and perspicuity, that it was abolished by the authority of parliament, and an act passed, establishing the king's supremacy over the church.

The pious archbishop having succeeded so far, vigorously exerted himself to promote the Reformation, for which purpose, he prevailed upon the convocation to petition the king for a translation of the Bible. The issue of this application has been mentioned in the life of Gardiner, in giving an account of his opposition to the work when published.

The next salutary measure to which he gave his approbation, was the dissolution of the monasteries. He saw how inconsistent those foundations were with the reformation of religion, which he then had in view; and proposed, that out of the revenue of the monasteries, the king should found more bishoprics; that the dioceses being reduced into less compass, the bishops might be the better enabled to discharge their duty.

He farther advised, that the king should only have the revenues of such monasteries, as were royal foundations, endowed by his predecessors; and that the estates of the rest should be employed in founding hospitals, grammar schools, and other useful institutions. But the courtiers, who hoped to share the spoils, voted in parliament, that all the revenues of the monasteries should be appropriated to the king's use, and this resolution, having passed into a law, the archbishop, and some other prelates, incurred the king's displeasure for their good intentions. However, the king afterwards complied with part of the archbishop's plan, by founding six new bishoprics.

In

In 1537, the archbiſhop, with the joint authority of the biſhops, publiſhed a book, intituled, The Inſtitution of a Chriſtian Man. This book being compoſed by the biſhops, was moſt commonly called The BISHOPS BOOK. It contains an explanation of the Ten Commandments, the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, the Ave Maria, and the Sacraments.

In the year 1539, the intereſt of Gardiner and the Popiſh faction increaſed, and then the king's zeal againſt heretics appeared by his preſſing the bill containing the ſix bloody articles. The archbiſhop argued boldly in the houſe againſt it three days ſo ſtrenuouſly, that, though the king was obſtinate in paſſing the act, yet he deſired a copy of his reaſons againſt it; and ſhewed no reſentment towards him for his oppoſition to it. His majeſty, indeed, would have perſuaded him to withdraw out of the houſe, ſince he could not vote for the bill; but, after a decent excuſe, Cranmer told him, that he thought himſelf obliged in conſcience to ſtay and ſhew his diſſent.

When the bill paſſed, he entered his proteſt againſt it; and ſoon after he ſent his wife privately away to her friends in Germany. The king, who eſteemed him for his integrity and reſolution, ſent the dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk, and the lord Cromwell, to aſſure him of his favour, notwithſtanding the paſſing of the act.

After the death of the earl of Eſſex, the archbiſhop retired for a time from court, and attended ſolely to eccleſiaſtical affairs. And in 1541, he ordered all ſuperſtitious ſhrines to be taken away from the churches, purſuant to the king's letters, which he had ſolicited for that purpoſe.

The following year, he endeavoured to get the ſevere articles moderated, and to procure the people the full liberty of reading the Scriptures; but the

Popiſh biſhops ſo far prevailed, that the bill was clogged with reſtraints and limitations, which made it fall far ſhort of the archbiſhop's benevolent deſign. But even as it was, his enemies could no longer brook his introduction of further reformation; and, therefore, while he was piouſly holding a viſitation at Canterbury, they collected and drew up articles againſt him, which being put in order by Gardiner, and copied by his ſecretary, he got them ſigned by ſome of the prebendaries of Canterbury, and then, in the name of the church of Canterbury, preſented them to the council. By theſe means they came into the king's hands, who perceiving that the whole charge was founded in malice, went the ſame evening to amuſe himſelf upon the river, in his barge, taking the articles with him, and ordered the bargemen to row to Lambeth, the archbiſhop being returned from Canterbury. The ſervants perceiving the king's barge approach the ſhore, appriſed their maſter, who was ready upon the ſtairs to receive him; but the king ordered him to come into the barge, and to ſeat himſelf by him, after which, he began to lament the growth of hereſy, and the diſſentions, and confuſion that were likely to follow; adding, that he intended to find out the encourager of theſe hereſies, and to make him an example to the reſt. He then aſked the archbiſhop's opinion upon this, who told him, it was a very good reſolution, but intreated him to conſider well what hereſy was, and not to condemn thoſe as heretics, who ſtood up for the word of God againſt human inventions. "O my chaplain, (replied the king) now I know who is the greateſt heretic in Kent," and then ſhewed him the articles againſt him, his chaplains, and ſome of his friends, ſigned by ſome prebendaries of Canterbury, and juſtices of the peace in Kent. It both ſurpriſed and afflicted the worthy pre-

prelate, that thoſe of his own church, and juſtices, whom he had obliged, ſhould be guilty of ſuch treachery. But having looked over the articles, and knowing the falſehood of them, he kneeled to the king, and acknowledging that he was ſtill of the ſame opinion with reſpect to the ſix articles, but that he had done nothing againſt them, he deſired his majeſty to grant a commiſſion to whomſoever he pleaſed, to try the truth of the accuſations. Then the king jocoſely aſked him, if his grace's bed-chamber would ſtand the teſt of thoſe articles? The archbiſhop frankly confeſſed, that he was married in Germany, during his embaſſy at the emperor's court, before his promotion to the ſee of Canterbury; but, at the ſame time, aſſured the king, That, on paſſing that act, he had parted with his wife, and ſent her abroad to her friends.

The king, in return for his ſincerity, told him, he would grant a commiſſion for the trial, but he had ſuch confidence in his integrity, that he ſhould name him the chief commiſſioner, being well aſſured, that he would bring the truth to light, though it were againſt himſelf. He then named Dr. Bellhouſe, ſecond commiſſioner, and left the reſt to the archbiſhop; adding, that if he managed the matter wiſely, he would diſcover a pretty conſpiracy againſt him. Cranmer expoſtulated with great modeſty, againſt the appearance of partiality, in making him judge in his own cauſe, but the king was determined, and thus they parted.

The candid archbiſhop appointed his vicar general, and his principal regiſter, to be the other commiſſioners, though he knew they were ſecret favourers of the Romiſh faction. Then they went to Feverſham and opened their commiſſion, by ſending for two of the prebendaries, the principal complainants againſt the archbiſhop, who expoſ-

tulated with them on their baſe ingratitude, in ſuch pathetic terms, that they could not refrain from weeping: after ordering them into cuſtody, Cranmer left the farther diſcovery of the plot againſt him to the other commiſſioners, but they proceeding but ſlowly in the buſineſs, the king ſent Dr. Leigh, and Dr. Taylor, eminent civilians, as new commiſſioners, with freſh inſtructions. Theſe gentlemen iſſued orders to the archbiſhop's officers, to go to Canterbury, and ſearch the houſes of certain prebendaries, and others, ſuſpected of the conſpiracy, and to bring all letters or other writings they could find relative to the archbiſhop to them. The ſeveral officers executed their duty at the ſame hour, and in a ſhort ſpace of time. The whole conſpiracy was diſcovered, and brought home to Gardiner, Bonner, and others, whoſe letters were found. Theſe letters were afterwards peruſed by the king; but the archbiſhop was deeply affected, on finding among the papers, letters from Dr. Thornden and Dr. Barber, gentlemen of his own houſehold, on whom he had beſtowed uncommon marks of eſteem and friendſhip. But the good archbiſhop, after making them paſs ſentence on themſelves, by putting the queſtion, what puniſhments the blackeſt ingratitude deſerved, produced their letters; and upon their expreſſing ſincere penitence, he diſmiſſed them from his ſervice, as unworthy of his future confidence; but he never expreſſed the leaſt reſentment againſt them afterwards, when he was obliged to ſee them upon public occaſions. The archbiſhop's mild, forgiving temper, was ſo well known, that it became a common ſaying; "Do my lord of Canterbury an ill turn, and he will be your friend ever after."

A freſh inſtance of this Chriſtian temper appeared in 1544; for Sir John Goſtwick, one of

the members for Bedfordſhire, accuſed the archbiſhop, in the houſe of commons, of manifeſt hereſy againſt the ſacrament of the altar, in his ſermons and lectures at Sandwich, and at Canterbury. The king hearing of this, and knowing it to be a freſh effort of diſappointed malice, ſent a meſſage to Goſtwick, whom he called varlet, that if he did not acknowledge his fault, and ſo reconcile himſelf to the archbiſhop, that he might become his good lord, he would ſoon make him a poor Goſtwick, and puniſh him as an example to others; adding, that he wondered how Goſtwick, who had never been in Kent, could hear my lord of Canterbury out of it. Goſtwick, upon this, repaired to Lambeth, and not only obtained the archbiſhop's forgiveneſs, but his promiſe, which he performed, to intercede for him with the king.

This year, the archbiſhop's palace at Canterbury was burnt down, and his brother-in-law, with ſome other perſons, periſhed in the flames. And ſoon after this misfortune, the duke of Norfolk, and the reſt of the Popiſh party in the council, went to the king, and made a formal complaint againſt the archbiſhop, alleging that he, with his learned men, had ſo infected the kingdom, that the major part of the people were become abominable heretics; and repreſented that this might produce commotions, like thoſe which had ſprung up in Germany, on the ſame account. They therefore prayed, that the archbiſhop might be committed to the Tower, until he could be examined, giving as a reaſon, that no man would dare to object matters againſt him being a privy counſellor, till he was confined. Their importunities prevailed, but the ſame night, the king ſent a gentleman of his privy chamber to Lambeth, to fetch the archbiſhop; and, when he was come, told him, how he had been daily importuned to commit him to

pri-

priſon, as a favourer of hereſy; and how far he had complied. The archbiſhop thanked his majeſty for this timely notice, and declared himſelf willing to go to the Tower, and ſtand a trial; for, being conſcious he was not guilty of any offence, he thought that the beſt way to clear his innocence, and remove all unreaſonable and groundleſs ſuſpicions. The king admiring his ſimplicity, told him, he was in the wrong to rely ſo much on his innocence; for, if he were once under a cloud, and hurried to priſon, there would be villains enough to ſwear any thing againſt him; but, while he was at liberty, and his character entire, it would not be ſo eaſy to ſuborn witneſſes againſt him: "and, therefore," continued he, "ſince your own unguarded ſimplicity makes you leſs cautious than you ought to be, I will ſuggeſt to you, the means of your preſervation. To-morrow, you will be ſent for to the privy-council, and examined: upon this, you are to requeſt, that, ſince you have the honour to be one of the board, you may have ſo much favour as they would have themſelves; that is, to have your accuſers brought before you; and if they oppoſe this, and will not comply with your requeſt, but perſiſt in ſending you to the Tower, then do you appeal from them to our perſon, giving them this ring, (which he then delivered to Cranmer) and they ſhall well underſtand how to act; for they know I never uſe that ring for any other purpoſe, but to call matters from the council, before me."

The next morning, the archbiſhop was ſummoned to the privy-council; and when he came there, was denied admittance into the council-chamber. When Dr. Butts, one of the king's phyſicians, heard of this, he came to the archbiſhop, who was waiting in the lobby amongſt the foot-

footmen, to ſhew his reſpect, and to protect him from inſults.

The king ſoon after ſent for the doctor, who acquainted his majeſty with the ſhameful indignity put upon the archbiſhop. The king, incenſed that the primate of all England ſhould be uſed in ſo contumelious a manner, immediately ſent to command them to admit the archbiſhop into the council-chamber. At his entrance, he was ſaluted with an heavy accuſation of having infected the whole realm with hereſy; and ordered to the Tower, till the whole of this charge was thoroughly examined. The archbiſhop deſired to ſee the informers againſt him, and to have the liberty of defending himſelf before the council, and not to be ſent to priſon on bare ſuſpicion: but, when this was abſolutely denied him, and he found that neither arguments nor intreaties would prevail, he appealed to the king; and producing the ring he had given him, put a ſtop to their proceedings.

When they came before the king, he ſeverely reprimanded them; expatiated on his obligations to Cranmer for his fidelity and integrity; and charged them, if they had any affection for him, to expreſs it by their love and kindneſs to the archbiſhop.

Cranmer having eſcaped this ſnare, ſhewed not the leaſt reſentment for the injuries done to him; and, from this time, had ſo great a ſhare in the king's favour, that nothing farther was attempted againſt him in this reign.

Our indefatigable prelate now ſet about a reviſion and alteration of the eccleſiaſtical laws of England, which being founded on the canon law, were incompatible with the king's ſupremacy, or the general principles of the Reformation. But when by the aſſiſtance of ſome of his friends he had completed a new body of eccleſiaſtical laws, he

he had the mortification to find his intereſt not ſufficient to get them confirmed by parliament.

Henry VIII. died ſoon after, and archbiſhop Cranmer had the honour to place the crown on the head of his ſucceſſor, and now having a Proteſtant prince on the throne, and being himſelf one of the regency, many meaſures were taken, ſupported by the protector, to perfect the Reformation. The archbiſhop procured a repeal of the ſtatute of the ſix articles: he held a convocation in November, 1547, in which he exhorted the clergy to throw off the corrupt innovations of Popery, and to ſtudy the Scriptures; the communion in both kinds was eſtabliſhed; the marriage of prieſts declared lawful by a majority; and other meaſures taken, favourable to the new religion, in this convocation. And it was obſerved, that Gardiner and Bonner were uncommonly aſſiduous in executing the archbiſhop's orders for ſuppreſſing ridiculous proceſſions in their dioceſes. The following year, Cranmer publiſhed a catechiſm, or ſhort inſtruction in the Chriſtian religion for the uſe of children and young perſons, and a Latin treatiſe, againſt unwritten verities; intended to prove, that all idle traditions are to be diſregarded; and that the Bible ſhould be conſidered as the only oracle of ſalvation. He likewiſe obtained an order of council for the total removal of all images from the churches.

Hitherto, the conduct of archbiſhop Cranmer had been in every reſpect irreproachable, but in the year 1549, he obtained a commiſſion, together with Latimer, Ridley, and others, by no means conformable to the ſpirit or principles of true Chriſtianity as it is found in the Scriptures, which he profeſſed to make the ſole rule of all his actions. Complaint had been made to the council, that with other foreigners who had lately been encouraged,

couraged, being Proteſtants, flying from perſecution, to come to England, ſeveral anabaptiſts and others, who taught ſtrange doctrines, were arrived and were propagating their errors. The commiſſioners were therefore authoriſed to endeavour to reclaim them, but if they perſiſted in their opinions to excommunicate them, and deliver them over to the ſecular power to be farther proceeded againſt. This commiſſion wore the aſpect of Popiſh perſecution; for the mode of proceeding was the ſame, only it differed as to the objects; and it is ſaid, it was framed after a commiſſion given to Gardiner and Bonner in the laſt reign, to enforce the obſervance of the bloody ſtatutes. However this be, too true it is, to the eternal diſhonour of Cranmer, that he paſſed ſentence of death on a poor ignorant woman, one Joan Bocher, who deſerved the pity of a learned Chriſtian biſhop, rather than condign puniſhment.

She denied "that Chriſt was truly incarnate of the Virgin, whoſe fleſh being ſinful, he could take none of it: but the word, ſhe ſaid, by the conſent of the inward man in the Virgin, took fleſh of her." Theſe were her words, and they are to the full as intelligible as moſt of the opinions broached by the learned commentators, in the dark ages of ſuperſtition, or by our modern enthuſiaſts, on the ſame inexplicable ſubject. We are ſorry to add, that our archbiſhop over-ruled the diſcerning young monarch, who was againſt ſigning a warrant for her execution, and when he did ſet his hand to it, it was with tears in his eyes, and a proteſtation, that if he did wrong, it was in ſubmiſſion to the archbiſhop's authority, who muſt anſwer for it to God. This made a ſenſible impreſſion on Cranmer, and both he and Ridley took great pains to convert the woman, delaying the execution from time to time for this purpoſe; but as ſhe abſolutely

lutely refuſed to abjure her opinions, ſhe was burnt in May, 1550, and not long after, George Van Parre, a Dutchman, was condemned by the commiſſioners and committed to the flames, for maintaining that God the Father was the only God, and that Chriſt was not very God.

This year, the archbiſhop, and other commiſſioners, deprived Gardiner: Bonner had ſhared the ſame fate a few months before. He alſo ordained ſeveral prieſts and deacons, for the firſt time, according to the form ſet forth in the book of Common Prayer, which having been reviſed, and amended, was eſtabliſhed by act of parliament in 1552. Cranmer had now publiſhed his Treatiſe of the Sacrament, in which he confutes the doctrine of the real preſence, and this tract gave great offence to the Popiſh party, by whom Gardiner was perſuaded to write againſt it, and the archbiſhop was ſeverely reproached for having perſiſted ſo many years in the belief of the real preſence, and then denying it ſo ſuddenly; and, indeed, Cranmer owned that Ridley's converſation had led him to this late diſcovery of his former error. In the courſe of this year, the archbiſhop had two ſevere fits of illneſs, which prevented his attendance at the council-board, till the affair of the ſucceſſion in favour of lady Jane Grey was partly determined. It appears, that he oppoſed it, eſpecially the excluſion of the princeſs Elizabeth; but in the end, he ſubſcribed, and after Edward's death, he openly appeared for lady Jane, and was one of her council. But upon the acceſſion of Mary, a falſe report was raiſed, that archbiſhop Cranmer, in order to make his court to the queen, had offered to reſtore the Latin ſervice, and that he had already ſaid maſs in his cathedral church at Canterbury. To vindicate himſelf from this vile and baſe aſperſion, the archbiſhop publiſhed a declaration,

ration, in which he not only cleared himself from that unjust imputation, but also made a challenge, with the assistance of Peter Martyr, and a few more, to maintain by a public disputation, the liturgy established in the late reign. This declaration soon fell into the hands of the council, who cited him to appear in the Star Chamber, where he was asked, if he was the author of that seditious declaration that was given out in his name.

Cranmer acknowledged it to be his; but complained that it had, contrary to his intention, stolen abroad in an imperfect condition: for his design was to review and correct it; and then, after he had put his seal to it, to fix it up at St. Paul's, and on all the church doors in London.

Contrary to his own expectations, he was dismissed after this examination, though he saw his answer had enraged the commissioners; and now his friends who foresaw this storm, advised him to consult his safety by retiring beyond sea. But he thought it would reflect a great dishonour on the cause he had espoused, if he should desert his station at such a time as this; and he chose rather to hazard his life, than give such just cause of scandal and offence. In a few days after, he was summoned to attend the council, and was charged with high treason against the queen, which he had aggravated by dispersing seditious bills, exciting tumults, to the great disquiet of the state.

In November, 1553, archbishop Cranmer was attainted by the parliament, and adjudged guilty of high treason. His see was hereupon declared void; and on the tenth of December, the dean and chapter of Canterbury gave commissions to several persons to exercise archiepiscopal jurisdiction in their name, and by their authority. The queen also now gave her subjects a specimen of her bigotry, in-

ingratitude, and revenge. She was under perſonal obligations to Cranmer, of the higheſt nature, who had interceded for her with her father, when he had reſolved to put her to death publicly, for adhering to the cauſe of her mother, and refuſing to ſubmit to him after their ſeparation. Neither the duke of Norfolk, nor Gardiner, though they were then in power, would venture to plead for her; but our archbiſhop boldly repreſented to the king, that ſuch an act would fill all Europe with horror and aſtoniſhment. But the ſame prelate divorced her mother, and he was a heretic; theſe two crimes were thought ſufficient to cancel every obligation; and, therefore, with true Jeſuitical ſubtilty, ſhe pardoned him the treaſon, but left him in cuſtody, in the hands of his bitter enemies, to ſuffer a more cruel death, as a heretic.

In April, 1554, the archbiſhop was removed from the Tower to Oxford, to diſpute with ſome ſelect perſons of both univerſities. At the firſt appearance of the archbiſhop in the public ſchools, three articles were given him to ſubſcribe; in which the corporeal preſence, by tranſubſtantiation, was aſſerted, and the maſs affirmed to be a propitiatory ſacrifice for the ſins of the living and the dead. Theſe, he declared freely, he eſteemed groſs untruths; and promiſed to give an anſwer concerning them in writing.

Accordingly, he drew it up; and, when he was brought again to the ſchools to diſpute, he delivered the writing to Dr. Weſton, the prolocutor. At eight in the morning the diſputation began, and held till two in the afternoon: all which time, the archbiſhop conſtantly maintained the truth, with great learning and courage, againſt a multitude of clamorous and inſolent opponents: and three days after, he was again brought forth to oppoſe Dr. Harpsfield, who was to reſpond for his de-

degree in divinity: and here he acquitted himself so well, clearly shewing the gross absurdities, and inextricable difficulties of the doctrine of transubstantiation, that Weston himself, as great a bigot as he was, could not but dismiss him with commendation. In these disputations, with other slanderous reproaches, the archbishop was accused of corrupting and falsifying a passage which, in his book of the Sacrament, he had quoted from St. Hilary. In answer to which, he replied, that he had transcribed it verbatim from the printed book; and that Dr. Smith, one of their own divines, there present, had quoted it word for word also. But Smith made no reply, being conscious that it was true.

When the disputation was over, one Mr. Heleot remembering that he had Smith's book, went directly to his chamber in University-college; and comparing it with Cranmer's, found the quotations exactly to agree. He afterwards looked into a book of Gardiner's, called, "The Devil's Sophistry," where the same passage was cited; and both the Latin and English agreed exactly with Cranmer's quotation and translation. Upon this, he resolved to carry the said books to the archbishop in prison, that he might produce them in his own vindication.

When he came thither, he was stopped and brought before Dr. Weston and his colleagues, who, upon information of his design, charged him with treason, and abetting Cranmer in his heresy; and committed him to prison. The next day, he was again brought before them; and they threatened to send him to Gardiner, to be tried for treason, unless he would subscribe to the three articles concerning which the disputations had been held. This he then refused; but, being sent for again, after the condemnation of Cranmer, through fear, he

he consented to it; yet not till they had assured him, that, if he sinned by so doing, they would take the guilt upon themselves, and answer for it to God: and yet even this subscription, of which he afterwards heartily repented, could not prevail for the restoring his books, lest he should shew them to their shame; nor for his entire discharge, the master of University-college being commanded to keep a strict watch over him till Gardiner's pleasure concerning him was known: and, if he heard nothing from him in a fortnight's time, then to expel him the college for his offence.

On the twentieth of April, Cranmer was brought to St. Mary's, before the queen's commissioners; and refusing to subscribe, was pronounced an heretick, and sentence of condemnation read against him as such: upon which the archbishop said, "From this your unjust judgement and sentence, I appeal to the just judgement of the Almighty, trusting to be present with him in heaven." After this, his servants were dismissed from their attendance, and he was more closely confined in prison. The commissioners and a Popish convocation then met, and did archbishop Cranmer the honour to order his book of the Sacrament to be burnt, in company with the English Bible and Common-Prayer-Book.

In 1555, a new commission was sent from Rome for the trial of archbishop Cranmer for heresy; the former sentence against him being void in law, because the authority of the pope was not then re-established. The commissioners were Dr. Brooks, bishop of Gloucester, the pope's delegate, Dr. Storey, and Dr. Martin, doctors of the civil law, the queen's commissioners.

On the 12th of September they met at St. Mary's church, and commanded the archbishop to be brought before them. To the queen's commissioners,

miſſioners, as repreſenting the ſupreme authority of the nation, he paid all due reſpect, but abſolutely refuſed to ſhow any to the pope's repreſentative, leſt he ſhould ſeem to make the leaſt acknowledgement of his uſurped ſupremacy.

He was charged with blaſphemy and hereſy, for what he had done and written againſt the pope's authority; with perjury in violating his oath to the pope; and with incontinence, on account of his marriage. The archbiſhop defended himſelf with great reſolution, and anſwered ſixteen interrogatories, which were put to him; after which Brooks, in the pope's name, cited him to appear at Rome, within eighty days, there to deliver his vindication in perſon: an act of the moſt flagrant injuſtice, as it was out of his power to comply, if he had thought it proper, being kept a cloſe priſoner all the time. To add to the abſurdity, as well as the cruelty of theſe proceedings, letters executory addreſſed to Philip and Mary, Bonner, biſhop of London, and Thirlby, biſhop of Ely, to degrade and deprive him, arrived in England from the pope on the 14th of December; in which letters he was declared contumacious for not appearing at Rome.

Some time before the archbiſhop's degradation, he wrote two letters to the queen, in which he repreſented to her the great evils which would reſult from the re-eſtabliſhment of the pope's authority in England; which, he ſaid, would ſubvert not only the laws of the nation, but the laws of God. He alſo endeavoured to convince her of the erroneouſneſs of the Romiſh doctrine of the ſacrament. He vindicated himſelf in his refuſal to acknowledge the Papal authority; and reminded her majeſty, that at her coronation, ſhe took an oath to the pope, to be obedient to him, to defend his perſon, and to maintain his authority, honour, laws, and pri-

privileges; and, at the same time, another oath to the kingdom, to maintain the laws, liberties, and customs of the same. He entreated her seriously to examine both oaths, and to see how well they would agree, and then to act as her conscience should direct. He feared, he said, that there were contradictions in her oaths; and that those who should have informed her majesty thoroughly, had not done their duty therein. He complained, that he was kept from the company of learned men, from books, from counsel, and from pen and ink, except what was now granted him, in order to write to her majesty. And as to his appearance at Rome, if she would give him leave, he said, he would appear there; and he trusted in God, that he would enable him to defend his truth there as well as here.

The delay in the proceedings against Cranmer have been accounted for in the life of Gardiner; and will be further noticed in the memoirs of cardinal Pole. The mortifying ceremony of degradation was not performed till the fourteenth of February, 1556, when the archbishop was brought before Bonner and Thirlby. After they had read their commission from the pope, Bonner, in a scurrilous oration, insulted over him in a most unchristian manner; for which he was often rebuked by Thirlby. When Bonner had finished his invective against him, they proceeded to degrade him; and, that they might make him as ridiculous as possible, the episcopal habit they put on him was made of canvas. Then the archbishop, pulling out of his sleeve a written appeal, delivered it to them, saying, "I appeal to the next general council."

When they had degraded him, they put on him an old thread-bare gown, and a townsman's coat; and in that garb delivered him over to the secular power.

power. As they were leading him to prison, a gentleman came and gave some money to the bailiffs for the archbishop: but this charitable action gave such offence to Bonner, that he ordered the gentleman to be seized; and, had he not found great friends to intercede for him, would have sent him up to the council to be tried for it.

While the archbishop continued in prison, no endeavours were omitted to bring him over to the church of Rome. Many of the most eminent divines in the university resorted to him daily, hoping, by arguments and persuasions, to prevail, but in vain. At length, his enemies finding that neither threats, nor fallacious arguments, could shake the fortitude of his soul, fell upon a stratagem which proved fatal to his reputation. They removed him from prison to the lodgings of the dean of Christchurch: they treated him with the greatest civility and respect, made him large promises of the queen's favour, and the restitution of his former dignities, if he would only set his name to a paper. He resisted their importunities for some time, but by continual representations of the difference between the prospect of living many years honoured and esteemed, and the horrors of voluntarily putting a period to his days, by the terrible death of fire, human frailty gave way to the temptation; and, in an unguarded moment, he signed a renunciation of the Protestant, and an acknowledgment of his belief of the Romish religion, in the most ample terms, declaring himself sorry for his past errors, exhorting all whom he had misled to return to the Romish faith, and protesting, that he had signed the paper willingly, and solely for the acquittal of his conscience.

When the Popish party had obtained this triumph over the unfortunate archbishop, they caused his recantation to be printed and dispersed with all

expedition; and now the mean, base perfidy, and treachery of his persecutors, manifested itself in the blackest colours. Even the queen, whose honour was concerned, that the promises made in her name should not be violated, was the first to declare, that his recanting must not serve his turn, though it would be sufficient in all other cases. It was, indeed, good (she said) for his soul, that he had repented, and might do good to others; but yet the sentence must be executed. Her majesty seems to have adopted the opinion, maintained by some of her own church, that faith was not to be kept with heretics.

The warrant for the archbishop's execution was accordingly sent down to Oxford, but he was kept in profound ignorance of this fatal mandate, from their apprehension that he would retract the recantation drawn from him, by their infamous delusions.

Dr. Cole, provost of Eton, was likewise appointed to preach a sermon at the stake, and the day before the execution, he visited the archbishop in prison, to exhort him to remain stedfast in the faith, to which he had subscribed, but he made no mention of his approaching death.

On the 21st of March, 1556, the day appointed for this authorised murder, several members of the council, and other persons of rank, who had been sent to Oxford by the court, to prevent any tumult, which might happen upon the occasion, assembled early in the morning, which proving rainy, it was agreed, that the sermon intended to have been preached at the stake, should be preached at St. Mary's church, and accordingly, the archbishop was brought there by the mayor, accompanied by lord Williams and other courtiers; and placed on a low scaffold opposite the pulpit.

Then

Then Dr. Cole began his ſermon; the chief ſcope whereof was, to endeavour to give ſome reaſons why it was expedient that Cranmer ſhould ſuffer, notwithſtanding his recantation: and, in the cloſe, he addreſſed himſelf particularly to the archbiſhop, exhorting him to bear up with courage againſt the terrors of death; and, by the example of the thief on the croſs, encouraged him not to deſpair, ſince he was returned, though late, into the boſom of the catholic church, and to the profeſſion of the true apoſtolical faith.

The archbiſhop, who, till now, had not the leaſt notice of his intended execution, was ſtruck with horror at the baſe treachery and unparalleled cruelty of their proceedings. During the whole ſermon he wept inceſſantly: ſometimes lifting up his eyes to Heaven, ſometimes caſting them down to the ground, with marks of the utmoſt dejection.

When it was over, Cole deſired him to make an open declaration of his faith, as he had promiſed, upon which he knelt down, and prayed in the moſt fervent manner; then riſing, he exhorted the people not to ſet their minds upon the world; to obey the queen; to live in mutual love; to avoid covetouſneſs; and to be charitable to the poor. Then he repeated the Apoſtle's Creed, and profeſſed his belief thereof, and of all things contained in the Old and New Teſtament: after which he declared his great and unfeigned repentance, for having, contrary to his faith, ſubſcribed the Popiſh doctrines; lamented it with many tears; and declared, that the hand, which had ſo offended, ſhould be burnt before the reſt of his body. Then he renounced the pope, in the moſt expreſs terms; and profeſſed his belief concerning the Euchariſt, to be the ſame with that he had aſſerted, in his book againſt Gardiner.

This was a mortifying disappointment to the Papists; they made loud clamours, and charged him with hypocrisy and falsehood. To which he meekly replied, That he was a plain man, and never acted the hypocrite, but when he was seduced by them to a recantation.—He would have proceeded, but Dr. Cole cried out from the pulpit, "Stop the heretic's mouth, and take him away." Upon which, they pulled him down with violence, and hurried him to the place of execution, the same where Latimer and Ridley had suffered the year before. He approached it with a chearful countenance; and, notwithstanding the earnest solicitations of many of the Papists, continued still to declare his utter abhorrence of the Popish errors, and hearty repentance for having recanted.

After this, he kneeled down and prayed; and then, having undressed himself, and taken leave of his friends, he was bound to the stake. As soon as the fire was kindled, he stretched forth his right arm, and held it, stedfastly and without shrinking, in the flame (only once he wiped his face with it) till it was quite consumed, which was some time before the fire reached his body, but he did not express any great sensation of pain. He often cried out, "This unworthy hand! this unworthy hand!" and, lifting up his eyes to heaven, expired, repeating the dying words of St. Stephen, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!"

Archbishop Cranmer was a prelate of considerable abilities and learning; but he had chiefly directed his studies to those branches of knowledge that were most immediately connected with his own profession. Mr. Gilpin says, "He had applied himself in Cambridge to the study of the Greek and Hebrew languages; which, though esteemed at that time as the mark of heresy, appeared

peared to him the only sources of attaining a critical knowledge of the scriptures. He had so accurately studied canon law, that he was esteemed the best canonist in England; and his reading in theology was so extensive, and his collections from the fathers so very voluminous, that there were very few points, in which he was not accurately informed; and on which he could not give the opinions of the several ages of the church from the times of the apostles. "If I had not seen with "my own eyes," says Peter Martyr, "I could not "easily have believed, with what infinite pains and "labour he had digested his great reading into par-"ticular chapters, under the heads of councils, "canons, decrees, &c." His library was filled with a very noble collection of books, and was open to all men of letters. He rose commonly at five o'clock, and was a great œconomist of his time. He accustomed himself much to read and write in a standing posture, esteeming constant sitting very pernicious to a studious man.

He was very kind to his servants and dependents, and extremely hospitable and generous to the poor. Bishop Burnet says, that archbishop Cranmer 'laid out all his wealth on the poor, and pious uses. 'He had hospitals and surgeons in his house for 'the king's seamen; he gave pensions to many of 'those that had fled out of Germany into England; 'and kept up that which is hospitality indeed at his 'table, where great numbers of the honest and 'poor neighbours were always invited, instead of 'the luxury and extravagance of great entertain-'ments, which the vanity and excess of the age we 'live in has honoured with the name of hospitality.'

*** *Authorities.* Fox. Memorials of Cranmer, by Strype. Burnet's History of the Reformation. Gilpin's Life of Archbishop Cranmer.

The LIFE of

CARDINAL POLE.

(Including Memoirs of EDMUND BONNER, Biſhop of LONDON.)

(A. D. 1500, to 1558.)

REGINALD POLE was deſcended from royal blood, being a younger ſon of Sir Richard Pole, lord Montague, Knight of the Garter, and couſin-german to Henry VII. by Margaret, his wife, daughter of George, duke of Clarence, younger brother to king Edward IV. He was born at Stoverton Caſtle, in Staffordſhire, in the year 1500; and, at about the age of twelve, was ſent to Magdalen college, in Oxford, where an apartment was provided for him in the preſident's lodgings. The famous Linacre, and William Latimer, two of the greateſt maſters of thoſe times in the Greek and Latin tongues, were our young nobleman's principal preceptors; and he made a conſiderable progreſs in his ſtudies under them.

In 1517, he was made prebendary of Roſcomb, in the church of Saliſbury; to which the deanry of Exeter, and other valuable preferments, were added about two years after. But he did not take any orders, as moſt writers have aſſerted.

He

He was now nineteen years of age, and, having laid the foundation of learning at Oxford, it was determined to send him, for farther improvement, to Italy, where the liberal arts and sciences then flourished; and for this purpose, an establishment suitable to his rank was provided by the king, who allowed him a liberal yearly pension, besides the income of his ecclesiastical preferments.

He was therefore accompanied to Italy by several learned Englishmen, besides a proper retinue of attendants; and after visiting several other universities, he settled at Padua; where his house soon became the resort of the most eminent literati of the age, with some of whom he formed an intimacy which lasted for life. Of these, the most distinguished by him were, Bembo, Sadolet, Longolius, and Thomas Lupset, a learned Englishman, whom he took into his family, and by his recommendation, Erasmus opened a correspondence with our young student, which produced a friendly intercourse between them. As to the professors, knowing how nearly he was related to the king of England, they strenuously exerted themselves to complete his education, and as they likewise partook of his noble liberality, they were not sparing of the most flattering encomiums on his genius and accomplishments, taking care to publish that their pupil was an honour to them, and an ornament to the university. From Padua he went to Venice, where he continued some time, and then visited other parts of Italy.

Having spent five years abroad, he was recalled home; but being very desirous to see the jubilee, which was celebrated at Rome in 1525, he took a tour to that city; from whence passing by Florence, he returned to England, before the expiration of the year; and was received with great af-

fection and honour, by the court, and the nobility. But devotion and ſtudy being his ſole delight, he retired to the convent of the Carthuſians at Sheen, in Surrey, where he had received the firſt rudiments of education, having obtained a grant from the king of the apartment which the late Dr. Colet had built for his own uſe.

He had paſſed two years with great pleaſure in this retirement, when king Henry VIII. began to ſtart his ſcruples about the lawfulneſs of his marriage with queen Catherine. Pole, forſeeing the troubles which this incident muſt occaſion, and that he ſhould not eſcape being involved in them, if he ſtaid in the kingdom, reſolved to withdraw; and obtained his majeſty's leave to go to Paris in 1529. Here, carrying ſome learned perſons in his train, he paſſed his time in literary eaſe, till the king, proſecuting the affair of the divorce, and ſending to the moſt celebrated univerſities in Europe for their opinion on his caſe, commanded him to aſſiſt his agents in procuring the ſubſcription and ſeal of the univerſity of Paris to the illegality of the marriage.

Pole, being of the contrary opinion, as it appeared afterwards, excuſed himſelf to the king in his letters, by ſaying, that his ſtudies had lain another way. But Henry was ſo much diſpleaſed, that, when his kinſman returned home, not long after, he was adviſed, by all means, to clear himſelf of all diſloyalty, and appeaſe his majeſty's anger: and, having averted the ſtorm for the preſent, by his ſubmiſſion, he retired to his former ſolitude at Sheen.

About two years after this, the meaſure was ſecretly reſolved upon of deciding the king's cauſe independently of the Pope; and as Pole was univerſally eſteemed for his learning and piety, and was beſides of the royal blood, it was obſerved, that his

his conſent would be of great ſervice as an example to others. Accordingly, no means were left untried to win him over, even the Archbiſhopric of York, at this time vacant, was offered him: and, being irreſiſtibly preſſed on every ſide, he yielded, and repaired to the king, with a deſign to give him ſatisfaction: but his conſcience checking him the moment he was about to ſpeak, he was not able to utter a word, for ſome time; but being recovered, he quitted his former purpoſe, and ſpoke his ſentiments freely againſt the divorce, which being quite unexpected and diſpleaſing, exaſperated the king to ſuch a degree, that with a countenance full of anger, he put his hand to his dagger, but recollecting himſelf, he only ſaid, "I will conſider of your opinion, and you ſhall have my anſwer:" but he never ſent for him more.

Pole, however, being apprehenſive that farther danger would inevitably accrue to him, if he continued in England, obtained permiſſion once more to go abroad: and his majeſty was ſo far ſatisfied at preſent, that he continued his penſion for ſome time.

The firſt place Pole went to was Avignon in France. This town was under the pope's juriſdiction, and here he continued unmoleſted for the ſpace of a year; but finding the air did not agree with his conſtitution, he left it, and went to Padua. In this favourite univerſity he fixed his reſidence the ſecond time, making excurſions now and then to Venice.

Pole had now been a conſiderable time abroad, and Henry had frequently intimated his deſire that he would return home; but he made ſundry excuſes, and at laſt wrote to the king, that he neither approved of his divorce, nor his ſeparation from the holy ſee, both of which had now taken place. The king, in return, ſent him over a book written in England, by Dr. Sampſon, in ſupport of his

own ſupremacy, and required his opinion in anſwer to it. Upon this, Pole wrote his famous ſophiſtical treatiſe, intitled, *De unitate Eccleſiaſtica*, and ſent it over to the king. In this book, he condemned the king's actions, depreſſed the royal and exalted the papal authority, compared the king to Nebuchadnezzar, and concluded with an addreſs to the Emperor, conjuring him to turn his arms rather againſt the king, than the Turk.

Henry concealed his reſentment, and wrote to him, requiring him, all excuſes apart, to return immediately to England, that he might confer with him on the ſubject of his book and his letters, which required further explanation. But this angel of peace, as he is ſtyled by Phillips (a modern Popiſh writer of his life), had no inclination, it ſeems, to die a martyr in the pope's cauſe; and, therefore, taking warning by the fate of More and Fiſher, he wiſely, and peremptorily refuſed to return; upon which the king withdrew his penſions, and deprived him of his preferments in England, and not long after, an act of attainder paſſed againſt him.

The attachment conſtantly ſhewn by Pole to the papal intereſt, and his preſent misfortunes conſequent thereupon, made it expedient, that the Roman Pontiff ſhould publickly teſtify his approbation of his conduct, by ſome ſignal honour. Accordingly he was ſummoned to Rome, as the repreſentative of England, in a general council, to be held for the reformation of abuſes, not in the doctrine, for that they held ſacred and incapable of error, but in the adminiſtration of the affairs of the church. He arrived at Rome in 1536, where he was lodged in the pope's palace, and treated with great reſpect. His holineſs immediately propoſed to make him a Cardinal, but Pole, who had much higher temporal preferment in

in view, no less than the crown of England, by marrying the princess Mary, remonstrated against this promotion, and the pope seemed to acquiesce; but the next day, he insisted on his obedience, and Pole, who was not yet in holy orders, nor had received even the clerical tonsure, submitted to this ceremony, says Beccatelli, who was present, "with as much reluctance as the lamb to the sheering knife." After which, he was created Cardinal deacon of St. Nereus and Achilleus. His holiness then appointed him nuncio to the courts of France, and Flanders, that he might be the better enabled, from the vicinity of his residence, to correspond with the Roman catholics in England, and keep up the declining interests of the papacy in this country.

At Paris, he was received by the king very honourably, but did not stay long there; for Henry, being informed of it, sent to demand him of the French monarch; which being notified to him by that prince, he removed to Cambray, and put himself under the protection of the bishop. But this was no place of safety for him, on account of the war between France and the Empire, in which Henry was engaged; so that the English soldiers were continually harrassing those parts. The nuncio was therefore obliged to quit it, with precipitation; for as the price had been set upon his head, he was exposed to imminent danger, if he fell into their hands. He chose Liege for his next residence, in consequence of an invitation from Erardas the cardinal bishop, who received him with brotherly kindness. He continued at Liege about three months, expecting that the Emperor and the king of France would fulfil their engagements with him, by doing their utmost to foment the disturbances raised by the rebellious

Roman catholics in England; but this project failing, he was recalled to Rome.

Pole, while he was employed in holding correspondence with Henry's rebellious subjects, and while he was abusing him in the most scurrilous manner in his publications, complained in his letters to the pope, and to the French nuncio, of the ignominious treatment which he had met with from the king of England, who had proclaimed him a traitor and set a price upon his head: and though he owned his treasonable designs against Henry in the same letters, he had the duplicity to write to Lord Cromwell, about the same time, to clear himself from the imputation of disloyalty. This is another inconsistency with the character given him by Phillips, who makes his piety and sincerity his chief virtues.

At the close of the year 1538, his holiness imagining, that the bulls of excommunication and deposition, which he had published against Henry, would make his subjects better disposed to break out into another rebellion, dispatched the cardinal a second time, in disguise, to France and Flanders, upon the same pious business. But this scheme being counterworked by Henry, the cardinal met with a cool reception from his Imperial majesty; whereupon he returned by the same road to Avignon, where he acquainted the pope with his ill success; and, receiving a letter from his holiness to continue in those parts, he took this opportunity of making a visit at Carpentras to his acquaintance and beloved friend cardinal Jacob Sadolet; with whom he spent six months, and then came to Verona, where he staid some time with Gilbert, bishop of that see. After this, he was appointed legate to Viterbo, near Rome, in which station he continued till 1542, when the pope, having called the council of Trent, appointed him,

him, together with cardinal Paris, and cardinal John Morone, his three legates; but, as the council could not then aſſemble, on account of the wars which aroſe in Germany, and other Chriſtian ſtates, Pole returned to Viterbo. Between this place and Rome he paſſed his time, following his ſtudies in great repoſe and tranquillity, till in 1545, when the pope iſſued a ſecond citation for holding the council at the ſame place, and appointed Pole again, but with two different cardinals, his legates. Pole's colleagues arrived at Trent long before him, for his journey was delayed, upon the pretext that Henry had employed his emiſſaries to ſeize him on the road. At this time, he wrote a treatiſe on the nature and end of general councils, and at length he repaired to Trent, eſcorted through thoſe parts, where danger was apprehended, by a detachment of the pope's cavalry.

To account for the cardinal's juſt fears, it is neceſſary to mention, that his mother Margaret, counteſs of Saliſbury, his eldeſt brother Henry Pole, lord Montague, the marquis of Exeter, Sir Edward Nevil, and Sir Nicholas Carew, had been condemned and executed in England for high treaſon, in conſpiring to bring the cardinal to the throne. And though they were taken off, the deſign, Henry remaining under the pope's interdict, was not dropped at this time. The tranſactions of the council of Trent, called by lord Bolingbroke, "a ſolemn banter," may be paſſed over, being of little import to Proteſtant readers, and as the cardinal was obliged to retire to Padua, on account of his bad ſtate of health, we ſhall only obſerve, that it was removed to Bononia, after an oppoſition from the Imperial ambaſſador, upon which occaſion, Pole, invariably attached to the holy ſee, defended the pope's right to remove it, in the year 1546.

The

The next account we have of him, worth relating, is an extraordinary inſtance of his zealous audacity. Soon after Henry's death, he wrote a letter to the regency and council, adviſing them to reconcile the kingdom to the pope, and aſſured them, that if his advice were not followed, the kingdom would be expoſed to imminent dangers, and added, that the pope was willing, in charity to their ſouls, to ſend him over, to remedy their evils. He likewiſe addreſſed a written juſtification of himſelf to Edward VI. But the council diſregarding both his ſolicitations and his menaces, he gave the kingdom no farther trouble in his reign.

Pope Paul III. dying in 1549, our cardinal was twice elected to ſucceed him, but refuſed both the elections, one as being too haſty, and without deliberation; and the other, becauſe it was done in the middle of the night. This conduct has been aſcribed by Phillips and others to delicacy; but the true motive was his diſtant view of the crown of England, to the poſſeſſion of which no bar aroſe, in his opinion, from an heretical prince being ſeated on the throne, provided he could marry the princeſs Mary. Julius III. being choſen upon his refuſal, and the tranquillity of Rome being ſoon after much diſturbed by the wars in France, and on the borders of Italy, Pole retired, with the pope's leave, to a monaſtery of the Benedictines at Maguzano, in the territory of Verona.

In this retirement he continued till the death of Edward VI. but on the acceſſion of queen Mary, it was determined by the court of Rome, that Pole ſhould be ſent legate into England, as the fitteſt inſtrument, on all accounts, to effect the reduction of the kingdom to the obedience of the pope. The undertaking, however, required ſome conſideration. The act of attainder, which had paſſed againſt him under Henry VIII. had been confirmed

ed by Edward, and consequently remained still in force. Our legate, therefore, did not think it safe to venture his person in England, till he understood the true state of things there. However, it was not long before he received full satisfaction upon all these points, and accordingly he set out for England, by way of Germany, in the month of October 1553; but he had not proceeded far in the emperor's dominions, when a message came to him from that prince, to put a stop to his farther progress at present. This was soon followed by an express from queen Mary to the same purpose, who, to keep him in good humour, sent him the two acts that had passed, for the justification of her mother's marriage, and for bringing all things back to the state they were in at her father's death, desiring him likewise to send her a list of such persons as should be made bishops.

The cardinal being satisfied, that the true cause of this delay was to prevent his arrival in England before the queen's marriage to Philip should be completed, was not a little nettled at it, and wrote a letter to her majesty, wherein he said, he knew that this stop to his journey proceeded from the political views of the emperor; that he had spoken to the emperor's confessor about it, and had convinced him of the impropriety of such courses, and set him to work on his master. He also told the queen, he was afraid that carnal pleasures might govern her too much, and that she might thereby fall from her simplicity in Christ, wherein she had hitherto lived. He encouraged her, therefore, to put on a spirit of wisdom and courage, and to trust in God, who had preserved her so long. With regard to the acts, he found fault that no mention was made in the first of the pope's bulls, by the authority of which, only, it could be a lawful marriage; and he did not like, that in the other act, the worship

of

of God, and the ſacraments, were to be as they were in the laſt year of her father's reign, for then they were in a ſtate of ſchiſm, the pope's interdict ſtill lying on the nation, and till that were taken off, none could, without ſin, either adminiſter or receive them. He confeſſed he knew none of either houſe fit to propoſe the matter of rejecting the ſupremacy, which had been uſurped by her father, and her brother; and therefore he thought it beſt for herſelf to go to the parliament, having before-hand acquainted ſome few, both of the ſpirituality and temporality, with her deſign, and tell the houſe, ſhe was afflicted at the ſchiſm, and deſired a legate to come over from the apoſtolic ſee, to treat about it; and ſhould thereupon propoſe the reverſion of his attainder.

But the queen's marriage with Philip meeting with great oppoſition in England, it was reſolved that the legate ſhould be kept at a diſtance. With this view, another legation was contrived for him, to mediate a peace between the empire and France, in which he was unſucceſsful. In the mean time, the marriage between Philip and Mary being ſolemnized, no further oppoſition was made to the legate's journey; and, therefore, the lords Paget and Haſtings were ſent to Bruſſels to conduct him to England. He arrived at Dover on the 20th of November, 1554, where he was received by the biſhop of Ely, lord Montague, and other perſons of diſtinction. He then proceeded by land to Graveſend, where he was met by the biſhop of Durham, and the earl of Shrewſbury, who preſented him with the repeal of the act of his attainder, that had paſſed the day before. He afterwards went on board a yatcht, which conveyed him to Whitehall, where he was received with the utmoſt veneration by their majeſties; and after all poſſible honour and reſpect paid to him at court,

he

he was conducted to the archbishop's palace at Lambeth, the destined place of his residence, which had been sumptuously fitted up for his reception.

On the 27th, he went to the parliament, and made a long and grave speech, inviting them to a reconciliation with the apostolic see. from whence, he said, he was sent by the common pastor of Christendom to recover them, who had long strayed from the inclosure of the church. This speech produced a pretended miracle on the part of the queen, who affected to be not only pregnant, but that the joy she felt upon the occasion had made the child leap within her: and upon this declaration, *Te Deum* was ordered to be sung in all the churches in London; and Bonner caused prayers to be put up, that the child might be a male, well favoured, vigorous, and witty. No farther proof can be wanting, of the wretched bigotry of Mary, who thus set an example in her own person, for restoring the old fraudulent tricks of the Popish priests, ever ready to forge miracles, in aid of their delusions.

On the 29th, the speaker reported to the commons the substance of this speech; and a message coming from the lords for a conference, in order to prepare a supplication, to be reconciled to the see of Rome, it was consented to, and the petition being agreed on, was reported and approved by both houses; so that being presented by them on their knees to the king and queen, these made their intercession with the cardinal, who thereupon delivered a long speech, at the end of which, he granted them absolution. This done, they all went to the royal chapel, where *Te Deum* was sung on the occasion. Thus the pope's authority being now restored, the cardinal, two days afterwards, made his public entry into London, with all the solemnities

ſolemnities of a legate, and preſently ſet about the buſineſs of purging the church of pretended hereſy. But though theſe proceedings gave great ſatisfaction to the court, the cardinal had the mortification to find that they were deteſted by the citizens of London; for when he made his public entry, in paſſing through the city, no ſort of reſpect was ſhewn to him, and his bleſſing the people as he paſſed, was openly laughed at. This probably ſoured his temper, which it is pretended was naturally mild and amiable; it has likewiſe been aſſerted, that he adviſed moderate meaſures with reſpect to the Proteſtants; but it is an indubitable fact, that one of the firſt acts of his legantine authority was, to grant commiſſions for the proſecution of heretics; and he openly expreſſed his deteſtation of the reformed, refuſing to converſe with any who had been of that party. Indeed, he now put on the pride and reſerve of a Spaniſh inquiſitor. To this we muſt add, that the inſtructions he ſent to the biſhops and clergy, concerning the Proteſtants, plainly ſhew, that he was at the bottom of the ſanguinary proceedings of Gardiner and Bonner, though he made them the inſtruments of his cruelty and revenge.

In the mean time, the queen diſpatched ambaſſadors to Rome, to make obedience, in the name of the whole kingdom, to the pope; who had already proclaimed a jubilee on that occaſion. But theſe meſſengers had ſcarcely ſet foot on Italian ground, when they were informed of the death of Julius III. and the election of Marcellus II. his ſucceſſor. But this pontiff dying ſoon after, the queen, upon the firſt news of it, recommended her kinſman to the popedom; and diſpatches were accordingly ſent to Rome for the purpoſe, but they came too late, Peter Caraffa, who took the name of Paul IV. being elected before their arrival.

rival. This pope, who had never liked our cardinal, was better pleaſed with the biſhop of Winchester, whoſe temper exactly tallied with his own. In this diſpoſition he favoured Gardiner's views upon the ſee of Canterbury.

The cardinal, however, had now the ſole management of eccleſiaſtical affairs; and from this time it is demonſtrable, from the moſt authentic records, that the perſecution became more violent, and the executions more frequent. In proof of which, let it be remembered, that Gardiner, who ſecretly deteſted Pole, turned over the bloody buſineſs to Bonner ſoon after the cardinal's arrival; and that in three months after Gardiner's death, Cranmer was degraded and burnt, to make room for the cardinal, in the archiepiſcopal ſee of Canterbury, after he had loſt all hopes of the papal chair. Pole was made archbiſhop of Canterbury the day after Cranmer's execution, and before the end of the ſame year, 1556, he was made chancellor of Oxford and Cambridge. The hotteſt period of Bonner's fiery perſecution was from December 1555 to December 1556, when the cardinal was in the zenith of his power; for it declined ſoon after, from cauſes which ſhall be mentioned, after we have given ſome account of the infamous executioner of the tyranny of Mary, under her angel of peace, the cardinal legate.

Edmund Bonner was the reputed ſon of a lawyer in Cheſhire, but his mother was pregnant by one Savage, a prieſt, and married the lawyer to conceal her diſgrace. Being deſigned for the church, he ſtudied at Broadgate-hall, now Pembroke College, Oxford, and was made doctor of the canon law in 1525; but was never diſtinguiſhed for his learning, having rather a turn for ſtate affairs. This recommended him to Wolſey, and

and after his death to king Henry, by means of Cromwell, on whom he impoſed himſelf as a friend to the Reformation. Henry wanting an ambaſſador, who could talk in a menacing ſtyle to the pope and the king of France, pitched upon Bonner, whoſe brutal ferocity ſeemed ſuited to the occaſion; but he ſo far exceeded the bounds of common decency at Marſeilles, when he delivered the king's appeal, that the pope threatened to throw him into a cauldron of melted lead, or to burn him alive, upon which he made his eſcape. And ſoon after, behaving with great inſolence to Francis I. the French monarch bade him write to his maſter, "That his ambaſſador was a great fool, and that if it were not for the love of his maſter, he ſhould have an hundred ſtrokes with an halbert." He was recalled, but Henry finding him a pliant tool for every occaſion, made him firſt biſhop of Hereford, and then of London in 1539, when the bloody articles were to be enforced. And now the pretended Proteſtant (Cromwel being taken off) ſhewed himſelf in his true colours; his cruelties continuing till the acceſſion of Edward, when he openly complied with the injunctions reſpecting the Reformation, and at the ſame time ſecretly oppoſed it, and fomented the inſurrections of the Papiſts. He was therefore deprived, and committed to the Marſhalſea, till queen Mary releaſed him, and reſtored him to his former dignity in 1553. From this time, as his power increaſed, ſo did his inhumanity, which was exerciſed in the moſt ſhocking acts of cruelty, having a dungeon and inſtruments of torture in his own houſe; and he took an infernal pleaſure in puniſhing the unfortunate people in his cuſtody, with his own hands. Such was the character of the man, who acted as chief commiſſioner under the cardinal, to whom we will now return.

The

The year 1557 was opened with a ridiculous farce, added to the tragedy that was acting in all parts of the kingdom. At Oxford, the body of Peter Martyr's wife was taken up, and underwent a proceſs; but being a foreigner, who underſtood no Engliſh, no witneſſes could be brought to prove her a heretic; and therefore the body, by the cardinal's order, was buried again in a dunghill. At Cambridge, the bodies of Bucer and Fagius being buried in St. Mary's and St. Michael's churches, they were put under an interdict, and no ſervice could be performed in them; after which a formal proceſs was commenced againſt the deceaſed heretics. They were cited to appear, or any perſons for them; but after three citations the dead not ariſing to defend themſelves, nor any of the living appearing to plead for them, (for fear of being ſent after them) witneſſes were examined againſt them, and they were condemned as obſtinate heretics; the bodies being ordered to be dug up, and delivered to the ſecular power. After this, an account was ſent of the proceedings to London, and a writ was ſent down to the ſheriffs, in conſequence of which, the bodies were carried in their coffins, tied to the ſtake and burnt, with copies of their books.

But though the cardinal thus countenanced every abſurd and cruel meaſure to enforce the Romiſh faith, Paul IV. openly ſhewed his averſion to him, by revoking his legantine power, which he conferred this year on Peyto, a Franciſcan fryar; whom he had ſent for to Rome, and made a cardinal for the purpoſe, deſigning him alſo for the ſee of Saliſbury. This appointment was made in September, and the new legate was actually on the road for England, when the bulls came to queen Mary; who, having been informed of their contents by her ambaſſador, laid them up without

opening them, or acquainting her couſin with the matter, in whoſe behalf ſhe wrote to the pope, and aſſuming ſome of her father's ſpirit, ſhe wrote to Peyto, forbidding him to proceed on his journey, and charging him on his peril, not to ſet foot on Engliſh ground.

But notwithſtanding all her caution to conceal the matter from the cardinal, it was not poſſible to keep it long a ſecret; and he no ſooner became acquainted with the holy father's pleaſure, than out of that implicit veneration, which he conſtantly and unalterably preſerved for the apoſtolic ſee, he voluntarily laid down the enſigns of his legantine power, and forbore the exerciſe of it; diſpatching his truſty miniſter Ormaneto to Rome, with letters, wherein he cleared himſelf in ſuch ſubmiſſive terms, as it is ſaid even mollified and melted the obdurate heart of Paul. The truth is, the pontiff was brought into a better temper by ſome late events, which turned his regard from the French toward the Spaniards, and the ſtorm againſt Pole blew over entirely, by a peace that was concluded this year, between his holineſs and Philip, in one of the ſecret articles of which, it was ſtipulated, that our cardinal ſhould be reſtored to his legantine powers. But he did not live to enjoy the reſtoration full twelve months, being ſeized with a double quartan ague, which carried him off the ſtage of life, early in the morning of the eighteenth of November, 1558.

His death is ſaid to have been haſtened by that of his royal miſtreſs and kinſwoman, queen Mary; which happened about ſixteen hours before, in the 43d year of her age, and 6th of her reign. His body being put into a leaden coffin, laid forty days in great ſtate, at Lambeth; after which, it was conveyed thence with as great funeral pomp to Canterbury, and interred with ſolemnity on the

north ſide of Thomas of Becket's chapel, in that cathedral. Over his grave there was erected a tomb, on which were inſcribed only theſe three word, as ſufficient to his fame, Depoſitum Cardinalis Poli.

Thus was England happily delivered from papal tyranny, and the diſgraceful adminiſtration of a weak woman, who was fitter for a cloyſter than a throne. It is ſaid, however, that ſhe felt ſome compunction for the loſs of Calais, which fell into the hands of the French the year ſhe died, after it had been in the poſſeſſion of the Engliſh above 200 years; owing to the neglect of her miniſtry, wholly employed in the arduous buſineſs of proſecuting heretics. But this event was not the true cauſe of that deep melancholy which carried her to the grave. It was occaſioned by the deſertion of Philip, who treated her unkindly, and upon his father's reſignation of the Spaniſh crown to him, left her abruptly.

The cardinal's character has been ſo variouſly ſtated by different writers, that it is a hard taſk to aſcertain the exact truth at this diſtance of time: it may, therefore, be thought more diſcreet to refer the critical reader to different authorities, diſtinguiſhing the Roman from the Proteſtant writers by the letters R. and P.

*** *Authorities.* Life of Pole, by Ludovico Beccatelli, (his ſecretary) R. tranſlated by Pye, with notes, London, 1766. Thuanus R. Burnet's Hiſt. of the Reformation, P. Life of Pole, by T. Philips, R. Review of Philips, by the Rev. Gloceſter Ridley P. Animadverſions on Philips, by Dr. Neve, P. Britiſh Biography, vol. II. 1766. P.

THE

The LIFE of

SEBASTIAN CABOT,

Discoverer of NEWFOUNDLAND.

(A. D. 1477, to 1557.)

IN a maritime country, we know of no class of subjects who more justly claim the grateful remembrance of posterity, than able seamen, whether considered in the light of skilful navigators, or as brave defenders, on the ocean, of the national rights and private property of their country.

For this reason, having brought down the civil and ecclesiastical history of England to the period which concludes this volume, we cannot close it with greater propriety, than by giving a concise account of Sebastian Cabot, the contemporary, and rival in the book of fame, of Vespucius Americanus, betweeen whom and our English navigator, the first discovery of North America is contested.

SEBASTIAN CABOT was the son of John Cabot, an eminent Venetian navigator, who came to England in the reign of Edward IV. and being pleased with the country, settled at Bristol; and when

when the news arrived in England of the discoveries made by Columbus in South America, which tended to enrich Spain, Henry VII. from his avaritious temper, rather than from any laudable motive, resolved to send some of his subjects upon an expedition to make similar discoveries; and, upon this occasion, John Cabot was recommended to the king as an able, enterprising seaman, and one who excelled all others in his profession, which had been originally that of a pilot. Accordingly, the king gave him a commission in 1496, for the discovery of unknown lands, but more particularly of a north-west passage to the East Indies.

Young Cabot was born at Bristol about the year 1477, and being brought up to the sea, had made several short voyages, and being properly qualified, he, and his two brothers Lewis and Sancho, were joined in the commission given to the father, in case of his death, and it was expressly commanded, that they should return to the port of Bristol.

They had likewise the royal licence to take up six ships in any haven of the realm, and as many mariners as they could procure. In consequence of this permission, one large ship was equipped at Bristol, at the king's expence; and the merchants of London and Bristol added three or four small vessels.

With these, John Cabot and his son Sebastian set sail in the spring of 1497, and successfully kept on a north-west course. On the 24th of June they discovered land, which they therefore called *Prima Vista*, and the island which lies out to sea, before the main land, they called St. John's, because they discovered it on the festival of that saint. They afterwards called the whole coast, the Island of *Baccalaos*, being the name given by

the natives to a fiſh found along it in great abundance, ſince named Cod; and in after-times the place took the name of Newfoundland, which it ſtill bears.

John Cabot and his ſon took poſſeſſion of this land, in the name of the king of England, after which they ſailed down to Cape Florida, and then returned to England with a valuable cargo, and three of the natives, who were cloathed in ſkins, eat raw fleſh, and uttered an unintelligible ſpeech, not like any human language. All we know more concerning the father is, that he had the honour of knighthood conferred on him. There is likewiſe a chaſm of near twenty years in the life of Sebaſtian, but from the writings of foreigners it may be collected, that after his father's death, he made other voyages to complete the ſettlement of Newfoundland, and theſe might give riſe to the miſtake of attributing the firſt expedition to him; an error we frequently meet with in the imperfect annals of theſe times.

If this worthy man had performed nothing more, his name ought ſurely to be tranſmitted to future times with honour; ſince it clearly appears, that Newfoundland hath been a ſource of riches and naval power to this nation, from the time it was diſcovered, and as it was the firſt of our plantations, with ſtrict juſtice it may be ſaid of Sebaſtian Cabot, and of his father, that they were the authors of our maritime ſtrength, and opened the way to thoſe improvements which ſince have rendered us ſuch a powerful maritime and commercial nation.

The next tranſaction, in which he was concerned, occurred in the eighth of king Henry VIII. and our accounts of it are rather obſcure. It appears, however, that Cabot had entered into a ſtrict correſpondence with Sir Thomas Pert, at this time

vice-admiral of England, who had a houſe at Poplar, and who procured him a good ſhip of the king's, in order to make more diſcoveries. But it looks as if he had now changed his route, and intended to have paſſed by the South to the Eaſt-Indies; for he ſailed firſt to Brazil, and, failing there in his purpoſe, ſhaped his courſe for the iſlands of Hiſpaniola and Porto Rico, where he carried on ſome traffic; and then returned, being abſolutely diſappointed in the deſign upon which he went; not through any want either of courage or conduct in himſelf, but from the faint-heartedneſs of Sir Thomas Pert, and the want of manly courage in ſome of the other people who were connected with him.

This diſappointment, in all probability, inclined Sebaſtian Cabot to leave England, and to go over to Spain; where he was treated with very great reſpect, being declared pilot-major, or chief-pilot of Spain; and by his office intruſted with the reviewing all projects for diſcoveries, which, in thoſe days, were many and important.

His great capacity, and approved integrity, induced many rich merchants to treat with him, in the year 1524, about a voyage to be undertaken, at their expence, by the new-found paſſage of Magellan (diſcovered by Ferdinand Magellan, 1520), to the Moluccas; which at length he accepted; and of which we have the following account by Herrera the Spaniſh hiſtorian.

"He ſailed about the beginning of April, 1525, "firſt to the Canaries, then to the iſlands of Cape "Verde, thence to Cape Auguſtine and the iſland "of Patos, or Geeſe; and near Bahia de Todos "Los Santos, or the Bay of All Saints, he met a "French ſhip. He was ſaid to have managed but "indiſcreetly, being in want of proviſions when "he came to the iſland; but there the In-

" dians were very kind, and ſupplied him with " proviſions for all his ſhips; but he requited " them very indifferently, carrying away with him, " by force, four ſons of the principal men.

" Thence he proceeded to the River of Plate, " having left aſhore, on a deſart iſland, Martin " Mendez, his vice-admiral, captain Francis de " Rojas, and Michael de Rodus, becauſe they " cenſured his management; and, in concluſion, " he went not to the Spice-iſlands, as well becauſe " he had not proviſions, as that the men would " not ſail under him, fearing his conduct of the " veſſel in the Streights.

" He ſailed up the river of Plate, and above " thirty leagues above the mouth found an iſland " which he called S. Gabriel, about a league in " compaſs, and half a league from the continent " towards Brazil. There he anchored, and row- " ing with the boats three leagues higher, diſco- " vered a river he called San Salvador, or St. Sa- " viour, very deep, and a ſafe harbour for the " ſhips on the ſame ſide; whither he brought up " his veſſels and unloaded them, becauſe at the " mouth of the river there was not much water.

" Having built a fort, and left ſome men in it, " he reſolved to proceed up that river with boats " and a flat-bottom caravel, in order to make diſ- " coveries, thinking that, although he did not paſs " through the Streights to the Spice-iſlands, his " voyage would not be altogether fruitleſs.

" Having advanced thirty leagues, he came to " a river called Zacarana; and finding the natives " thereabouts a good rational people, he erected " another fort, calling it Santi Spiritus, i. e. of " the Holy Ghoſt; but his people called it Cabot's " Fort. He thence diſcovered the ſhore of the " river Parana, which is that called Plate, where " he found many iſlands and rivers; and keeping

" along

" along the greateſt ſtream, at the end of two hun-
" dred leagues came up to another river, which
" the Indians call Paraguay, and left the great ri-
" ver on the right, thinking it bent towards the
" coaſt of Brazil; and running up thirty-four
" leagues, found people tilling the ground; a thing
" which, in thoſe parts, he had not ſeen before.
" There he met with ſo much oppoſition, that he
" advanced no farther, but killed many Indians,
" and they ſlew twenty-five of his Spaniards, and
" took three that were gone to gather palmetos
" to eat.

" While Cabot was thus employed, James
" Garcia was ſent from Galicia, with one ſhip, a
" ſmall tender, and a brigantine, to make diſco-
" veries in the river of Plate, without knowing
" that the other was there before him. He entered
" the ſaid river about the beginning of the year
" 1527, having ſent away his own, which was a
" large ſhip, alleging that it was of too great a
" burthen for that diſcovery; and, with the reſt,
" came to an anchor in the ſame place where Ca-
" bot's ſhip lay, then directing his courſe, with
" two brigantines and ſixty men, towards the river
" Parana, which lies north and north-weſt, he ar
" rived at the fort built by Cabot. About one
" hundred and ten leagues above this fort, he found
" Sebaſtian Cabot himſelf in the port of St. Anne,
" ſo named by the latter; and, after a ſhort ſtay
" there, they returned together to the fort of the
" Holy Ghoſt; and from thence ſent meſſengers
" into Spain."

Thoſe who were diſpatched by Sebaſtian Cabot, were Francis Calderon and George Barlow, who gave a very fair account of the fine countries bordering on the river La Plata, ſhewing how large a tract of land he had not only diſcovered, but ſubdued, and producing gold, ſilver, and other rich

commodities, as evidences in favour of their commander's conduct. The requisitions they made in his name were, that a supply should be sent of provisions, ammunition, goods proper to carry on a trade, and a competent recruit of seamen and soldiers. To this the merchants, by whom Cabot's squadron was fitted out, would not agree, but chose to resign their rights to the crown of Castile. The king then took the whole upon himself, but was so dilatory in his preparations, that Sebastian Cabot, quite tired out, having been five years out upon this expedition, resolved to return home, which he did, embarking the remainder of his men, and all his effects, on board the largest of his ships, and leaving the smaller vessels behind him.

It was the spring of the year 1531, when Cabot arrived at the Spanish court, and gave an account of his voyage. It is evident from the manner in which the Spanish author speaks of him, that he was not well received; and one may easily account for it. He had raised himself enemies by treating his Spanish mutineers with great severity; and, on the other hand, his owners were disappointed by his not pursuing his voyage to the Moluccas. He kept his place, however, and remained in the service of Spain many years after, till at length, he was invited over to England.

His return is supposed to have happened towards the close of the reign of Henry VIII. for it appears that he resided at Bristol in the year 1546.

In the first year of Edward VI. this celebrated navigator was introduced to the duke of Somerset, with whom he was in great favour, and by whom he was made known to the king, who took a great deal of pleasure in his conversation, being much better versed in the studies to which Cabot had applied himself, than most of his courtiers, not-

notwithſtanding his youth. For he knew not only all the ports and havens in his own dominions, but alſo thoſe in France, their ſhape, the courſe to enter them, their commodities and incommodities, and, in ſhort, could anſwer almoſt any queſtion about them that a ſailor could aſk. We need not wonder, therefore, that with ſuch a prince, Cabot was in high eſteem, or that, in his favour, a new office ſhould be erected, equivalent to that which he had enjoyed in Spain, together with a penſion of 166 l. 13 s. 4 d. which we find granted to him by letters patent, dated January 6, 1549, in the ſecond year of that king's reign, by a ſpecial clauſe in which patent this annuity is made to commence from the Michaelmas preceding. Thenceforward he continued highly in the king's favour, and was conſulted upon all matters relating to trade, particularly in the great caſe of the merchants of the Steel-yard in 1551, of which notice has been taken in the life of the duke of Northumberland.

In the month of May, 1552, Cabot laid propoſals before the king, for a diſcovery of the north-eaſt paſſage to China and the Indies: which being approved, three ſhips were fitted out for the enterpriſe, and the command given to Sir Hugh Willoughby, to whom inſtructions were given, drawn up by Sebaſtian Cabot, at this time governor of the Company of Merchants Adventurers. Theſe inſtructions are preſerved entire in Hakluyt, and are a convincing proof how highly and deſervedly he was eſteemed by the king and the merchants. Sir Hugh Willoughby ſailed from Graveſend in May, 1553, and in Auguſt he loſt ſight of his ſecond ſhip, commanded by captain Richard Chancellor, which never joined him again. In the ſame month, he diſcovered Greenland, but the Dutch pretend to an earlier diſcovery. His utmoſt

pro-

progreſs was to 72 deg. N. Lat. and then finding the weather intolerably cold, the year far ſpent, and his ſhips unable to bear the ſea, he put into the haven of Arzina in Lapland, on the 18th of September; but being unable to come out when the froſt ſet in, Sir Hugh was found there the next ſpring, frozen to death (and all his ſhip's company), having the journals of his voyage and his will lying before him; by which it appeared that he lived till January, 1554.

As for captain Chancellor, after many dangers and difficulties, he penetrated to Archangel in Muſcovy, being the firſt perſon who diſcovered a paſſage to that port; and from thence he returned ſafe home. But unfortunately for him, he went a ſecond voyage to the ſame place, to bring over an ambaſſador from the court of Muſcovy to queen Mary, who brought her preſents, with an invitation to open a commercial intercourſe between England and Muſcovy; and on their paſſage the ſhip was caſt away upon the coaſt of Scotland, when captain Chancellor, in ſaving the life of the Ruſſian ambaſſador, was drowned.

In conſequence of this embaſſy, the Ruſſia company was eſtabliſhed by charter, 1 Philip and Mary, 1554, and of this Company Sebaſtian Cabot was appointed Governor for life, becauſe he was principally concerned in fitting out the firſt ſhips employed in that trade.

After this, we find him very active in the affairs of the Company in the year 1556; and in the journal of Mr. Stephen Burroughs, it is obſerved, that on the 27th of April that year, he went down to Graveſend, and there went aboard the Searchthrift, a ſmall veſſel, fitted out under the command of the ſaid Burroughs, for Ruſſia, where he gave generouſly to the ſailors, and, on his return to Graveſend, he extended his alms very liberally

to

to the poor, desiring them to pray for the success of this voyage. We find it also remarked, that, upon his coming back to Gravesend, he caused a grand entertainment to be made at the sign of the Christopher, where, says Mr. Burroughs, for the very joy he had to see the towardness of our intended discovery, he entered into the dance himself, a circumstance which shews the urbanity and chearfulness of his disposition. This is the last action of his life on record, and it is conjectured that he died soon after, at about seventy years of age.

He was unquestionably one of the most extraordinary men of the age in which he lived; and by his capacity and industry contributed not a little to the service of mankind in general, as well as of this kingdom. For he was the first who took notice of the variation of the compass, which is of such vast consequence in navigation, and has engaged the attention of the learned from that time to the present.

*** *Authorities.* Herrera's History of the Indies.

Hakluyt's Navigations and Discoveries of the English, edit. 1589.

Lediard's Naval History.

END of VOL. I.

TOWERS's Memoirs of the Life and Reign of Frederick the Third, the late King of Pruſſia, 2 vols. 8vo. 14s. bound.

Biographia Britannica. With conſiderable Additions and Improvements, to the preſent Time. By Dr. A. Kippis, &c. 4 vols. publiſhed, Six Guineas, in boards.

Cumberland's Obſerver; being a Collection of Moral, Literary, and Familiar Eſſays, 4 vols. crown 8vo. 16s.

Elegant Extracts; or, Uſeful and Entertaining Paſſages in Proſe; ſelected for the Improvement of Scholars at Claſſical and other Schools in the Art of Speaking, in Reading, Thinking, Compoſing; and in the Conduct of Life, 8vo. 9s.

Elegant Extracts in Verſe, ſelected from various Engliſh Authors; being ſimilar in Deſign to the Proſe Extracts, large 8vo. 9s.

Entick's General Hiſtory of the late War, from 1755, to the Peace in 1763; containing its Riſe, Progreſs, and Event in Europe, Aſia, Africa, and America, 5 vols. 8vo. 1l. 10s.

Gordon's Hiſtory of the Riſe, Progreſs, and Eſtabliſhment of the Independence of the United States of America; including an Account of the Late War, 4 vols. fine paper, 1l. 12s.

Knox's Eſſays, Moral and Literary, on a large Letter, 3 vols. 8vo. 1l. 1s.

Knox on a Liberal Education, much enlarged, 2 vols. 8vo. 14s.

Langhorne's new Tranſlation of Plutarch's Lives, in 6 vols. 8vo. 1l. 16s.